

THE
Honorable, pleasant
and rare conceited Historie
of Palmendos.



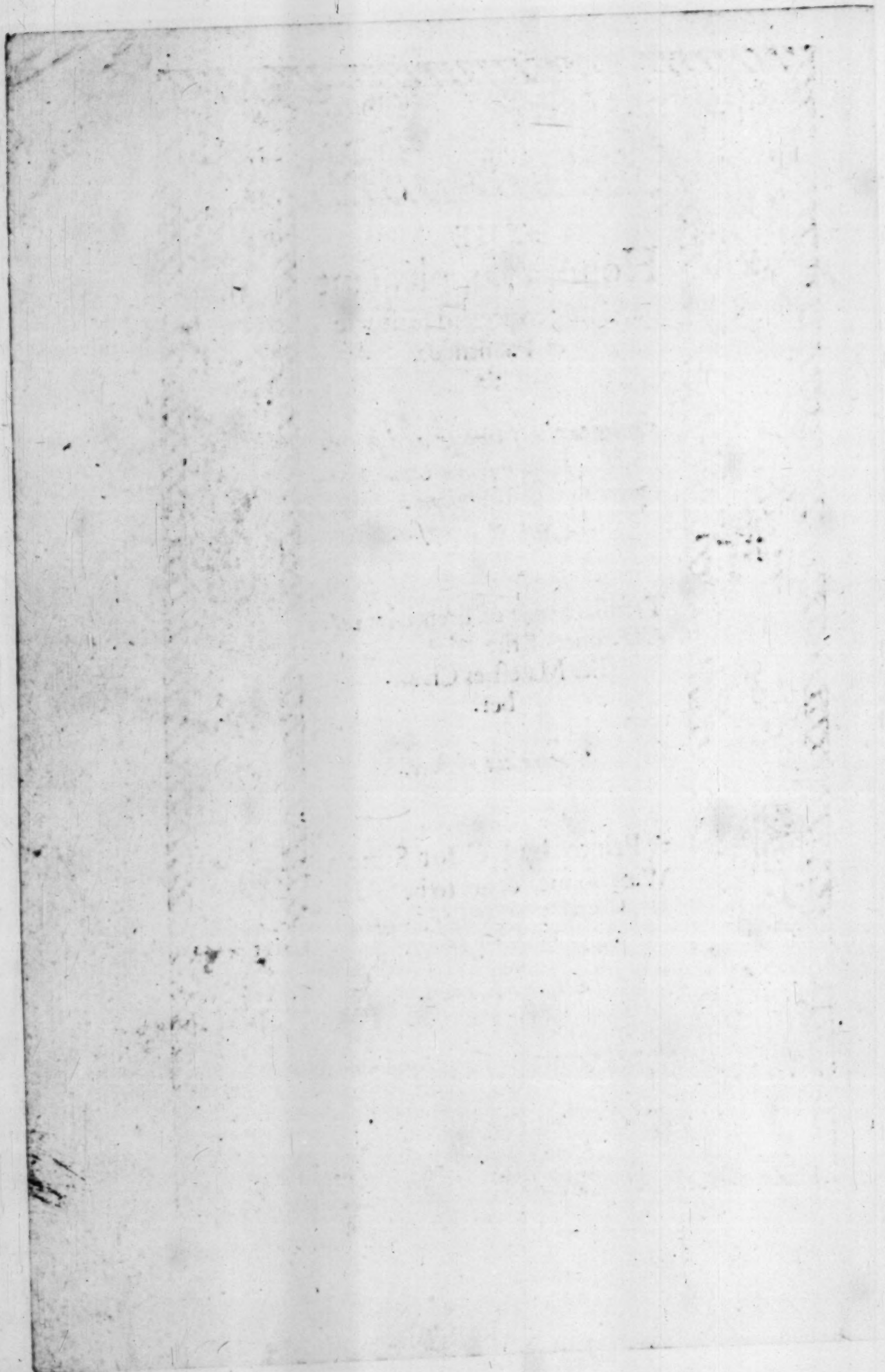
Sonne to the famous and fortunate Prince Palmerin d'Oliva, Emperour of Constantinople and the Queene of Tharsus.
(..)

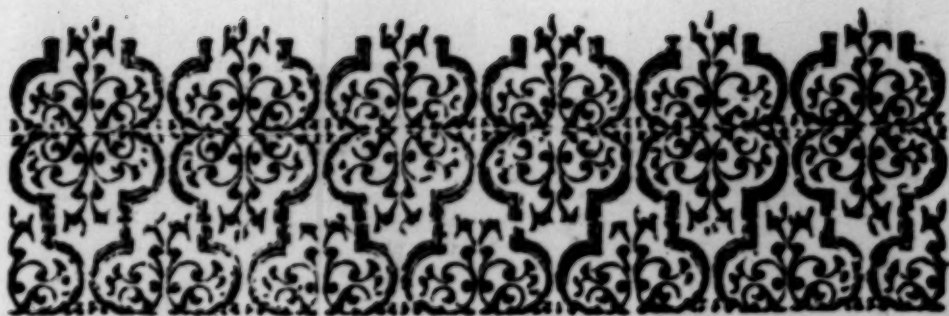
Translated out of French by *A. M.* one of the Messengers of her Maiesties Chamber.

Patere aut abstine.

AT LONDON
✱ Printed by I. C. for Simon Waterfonne, & are to be sold in Church-ward at the signe of the Crowne.

Anno. Domini.
1589.





Fortissimo, et militiæ naualis Peritis-
simo viro, Domino Francisco Draco
Equiti Aurato.



*Esinat Herculeas iam Grecia vana columnas
Mirari, aut Minyas, Dulichiumue ducens.
Amphitryoniadem superas fortissime Drace,
Iasonaque, et comites, Penelopesque virum.
Neptunusque suum credit tibi iure tridentem,
Cedit Sceptra libens, imperiumque maris.
Palmendos tanto latus, tutusque Patrono
Audet in innumeras peruolitare manus.
Zoilus inuideat rumpantur et ilia Codro,
Palmendos Draco vindice tutus erit.
It, volat, et gaudet, spernitque minacia verba,
Nempe soles tumides spernere Drace minas.*

Antonius Mondaius.

To the courteous Reader.



Auing finished this History of *Palmendos*, I commit the same to thy fauourable censure. And though it bee not flourishd forth with borrowed phrases of eloquence, yet hope I thou wilt accept it freendly, as thou hast done heertofore my works of the like matter. To make any commendation therof to thee, I will not, first reade thy fill thereon, and after iudge as thou findest occasion: yet with thy wonted fauour, to encourage me in proceeding in translation of *Primaleon*, which by the next Tearme I hope will be accomplished. From my house at Cripple gate the fifth of Februarie. 1589.

Thine in all courtesie.
Anthony Monday.

2

The history of *Palmendos*, sonne to
the famous Palmerin d' Oliua, Emperour of
Constantinople, and the Queene
of Tharsus.

Discourſing likewise of the Prince Rifarano, Sonne
to Tryneus Emperour of Allemaigne, & Aurecinda,
Sister to the Soldane of Persia: theyr Knightly deedes
of Chiuallrie, famous adventures, and
woorthy resolutions.

CHAP. I.

*Howe Belcar and Tyrendos beeing in the Courte of
the Emperour Palmerin, receiued theyr order of knight-
hoode, and how Belcar departed secretly from Constan-
tinople: and of the Combat he fought in the Realme
of Macedon, against the three Sonnes of a Knight that
lodged him.*



At long after the destruction of
the magnificent and proud Mo-
narchie of the *Romaines*, was es-
rected a new Empire in Greece,
which the incomprehensible
bountie diuine, fauoured with
continual happines, placing the
good Prince Palmerin d' Oliua,
in the Crowne and lawfull go-
uernment thereof: as wel in re-
spect of his great prowesse, high and knightlie paradores,
which with vigilant care he vsed for the defence of such an
estate, the onely renowne whereof brake the desseignes of
manie, that by hostilitie sought to disquiet him: as also in
regarde of the notable linage & posteritie discending from
him, of whose vertues and heroycall perfections, this pre-

The history of *Palmendos*.

sent Historie of *Palmendos* his Sonne is contrived, and therefore to be placed at the ende of his fathers trauels. In which discourse alreadie extant, (gentle Readers) you haue vnderstood, howe the Emperour Palmerin so loued and honozed knights errant, that from the furthest parts of the world they came to his Courte, because yercelie hee continued a sumptuous spectacle in forme of a Tourney, for the exercise of knightly and millitarie discipline: and with such religious zeale was this worthy practise folowed, as the Court might well be called y^e Schoole of Armes, and Purse of ciuilitie. For this cause, many Kinges, Princes, and great Lordes, sent their Sonnes to bee there educated, among whom, the good Knight Frysell King of *Hungaria* sent one of his, named Belcar, and the Duke Eustace of *Mecena* another, called Tirendos: that they might deserue their knighthoode at the hand of the Emperour, the true mirrour and Idea of manhoode, and so consequentlie they to participate some part of his bountie and p^rowesse.



The time then being come, that Belcar Son to King Frysell, shoulde receiue his order of knighthood, he humbly intreated the Emperour, that he might enioy it at his hand, and Tirendos Sonne to Duke Eustace of *Mecena*, desirous of the selfe same honour, made like request vnto his Maiestie, whereto the good Emperour (who loued them both with singular affection, knowing he w^o well Chiuallrie woulde bee employed by them) right willinglie condescended.

Whereupon, after they had performed the accustomed vigill, he knighted these two Princes with great royaltie, desiring God to bestow such fauour on them, as at no time they might degenerate from their famous p^recessours. And to Belcar, embracing him in his armes, he sayd. My good Nephewe, heauen accomplish in you such perfections of manhoode, as each one may knowe you to be the Sonne
of

The history of *Palmendos*. 2

of the worthy knight Sir Fryfoll, a Prince so hardie and valiant, as anie that euer followed Armes. The ceremonies being ended, they all returned to the Pallace, where the new knights being armed, rich Robes and Pantles were brought them, for greater honour of the feaste, which in the Courte at this time exceeded. But Belcar took little pleasure, in beholding the diuers occurrences at this assembly, because his minde was moze buſied with expectation of future glorie, which made him thus to commune with himſelfe. Belcar, thou haſt now no longer time to reſt, ſeeing thou haſt receiued the honorable order of knight hood, and that at the hande of the Emperour thyne Uncle, whom the diuine prouidence hath endued with ſo manie laudable vertues: nor doſt any thing want in the King thy Father, that is required in a man at Armes. If then hetherto thou haſt liued in pleaſure & delights, henceforth thou muſt bequeath thy ſelfe to trauaile, to ſhewe that thou doſt reſemble and imitate in ſome things thine Anceſtors, who with great labour and induſtrie haue attained ſuch fame and renowne, as the memozy therof ſhal remaine immortall. And if thou wilt not darcken this honour, then muſt thou haſten thy departure from y Court, and follow the ſearch of ſtrange aduentures, as they dyd in their daies for thine example.

After many and ſundry thoughts, that fought together within his ſpirit, he concluded to depart accompanied but with one Squire, and that ſo ſecretly as could be deviſed. Thence would he trauaile directly towards *Macedon*, to make the firſt proſe of his valour in y aduenture of *Francelina*, who was enchanted in y Iſle of *Carderia*, as was declared in the Hiſtozy of *Palmerin d' Oliua*. And at thys time was little talke of any other thing, then of the number of knights that daily fought to winne her in marriage, and with her the Kingdome of *Theſſalie*: for ſuch was the promiſed guerdon and recompence, to him that coulde deliuer her out of the enchanted Caſtell, but hetherto all

The history of *Palmendos*.

the knights lost their labour, for no one was able to finish the adventure. Belcar being earnestly provoked with the fame of this occasion, which was generally reputed strange and full of danger, resolved to frame his journey thither, because he earnestly desired to bring the enchantment to ende: his reason here in not to be disallowed, for beyond the achievement of great honour and praise, hee shoulde be endowd with so faire a Princeesse, as coulde not be iudged inferiour to anie. In this surpassing desire, concealed from anie one but himselfe, in regard of his perfect hope to compass the same: three daies he honored the feast with his presence, and the fourth day early in the morning, putting on a costlie Greeke Armour, which for this purpose he had secretly provided, carrying likewise in his Shielde for his devise, a Castell Guelles in a fildc argent, busine of any he left y^e Cittie, ryding on towarde the Realme of *Macedon*.

The Emperour some after understanding thereof, was not a little glad of his woorthy enterprise, which hee witnessed in the presence of al his Lords and Barons, saying. So helpe me God, as my opinion and hope is perswaded, that Belcar will so honourable followe Armes, as each of you will reioyce to heare y^e discourse of his fortunes: heaueu fauour and further his attempts, directing all his actions in such sort, as no tongue may controll his noble forwardnes. Belcars departure was liked of every one, except Tirendos, who was therat meruailously offended, because he had not acquainted him with his intent, for gladly wold he haue hadne him companie, and therfore he determined neuer to give ouer trauaile tyll he found him, as it came to passe verie soon after. In meane while, Belcar made such spede in his iourney, as without meeting any adventure to hinder him, in short time hee attayned the limits & confines of the Empire: and entring the Frontiers of *Macedon*, that night he was lodged in the Castell of an olde courteous knight, who sitting at his Gate, and seeing Belcar passe

The history of *Palmendos*. 3

passed by in the evening somewhat late, interested him for that night to let him be his Hoste, which he not willing to refuse, was well content to accept his offer. After that Belcar was unarmed, the olde Knight so well liked his brave constitution of bodie, his affable qualities and modest speeches, as he had great pleasure to sitte and talke with him; and falling from one circumstance to another, the good olde Knight perceived in the ende, that his guest was one in great favour with the Emperour Palmerin.

Now must I let you vnderstand, that this courteous old Knight had three Sonnes, by nature proud and evil disposed, envying the liberall hospitalitie which their father vsed to traouling passengers: wherefore the good old man, too well acquainted with their malicious behaviour, took them aside to admonish them, that they should vse no frowning or discourtesie to his guest. Know my Sonnes (quoth he) that this night we haue in our house one of the Emperours Knights, whose countenance both witness that hee is of high descent: I pray you therefore doe him all the honour you may, entertayning him with cheerefull and hartie good will, not vsing any speeches but such as are modest and meete for Gentlemen. They answered y they would fulfill his commaundement, yet their Father was no sooner gone, but they concluded altogether, on the morrow to assaile Belcar at the entraunce of a Forrest, which was not farre distant from the Castell, to try if he were such a man as their Father commended him to bee: and being thus resolved, they would not be scene at Supper, but earlie in the morning clasp ing on their Armour, they rode to the place of their appointment. The reuerend Father, seeing the ingratitude and disobedience of his Sonnes, did all the honoꝝ hee possibly coulde to Belcar, who requiting his gentlenes with many thanks, in the morning set forward on his Iourney: and scantly had hee ridden two leagues, but he met the three brethren vnder a wood side, when the eldest of them came to him with these speeches. Sir Knight,

A. 3.

you

The history of *Palmendos*.

you must of necessitie Ioust with mee, otherwise your passage may not be permitted, for now am I desirous to make proofe, if thou be so valiant as men doe esteeme thee. Belcar, who stood in doubt of a greater ambush, took his Launce from his Squire, and in very courteous manner thus replied. You may bee ashamed Sir Knight, to assaile any Gentleman belonging to the Emperour in this sorte, and happily you may deale with such a one, who shall giue you but little time to sitte downe and repent ye. Trouble not your minde with such imaginations, quoth another of the Brethren, but prepare your selfe to try the euent. At which wordes they fetched theyr carrie, and encountred together with such vigour, as their Launces flew in shyners by in to the ayre, Belcar being not moued in his saddle, where contrariwise, he gaue his enemye such a puissant stroke with the counterbuste of his staffe, as it was too late for him to call for a Chirurgion. When the other two Brethren saw this spectacle, and being perswaded that theyr elder Brother was wounded to the death: prouoked with extreame rage and indignation, they came to Belcar with these wordes.

In an euill howre (Knight) didst thou giue that blow, because thy death shall recompence the same. So ran they both together fiercely against him, the one sayling in the meeting, and the others happe so good, as hee gaue Belcar a small wounde on the arme: yet being of resolute courage he buckled with them so close, as one of the he sent to keepe company with his eldest brother, and the other he brought into such extremitie, that he fell from his Horse depriued of his senses. The Squire that came with these three brethren, seeing the bad fortune of his Masters Sons, rode presently backe to the Castell, and finding the aged Knight in his Chamber, thus began.

Alas my Lorde, in an unhappy howre did you entertaine the Knight that lodged here the last night, who (as it seemeth) came onely to kill your Sonnes. So deliuered he

The history of *Palmendos*. 4

he the whole discourse of the sight, which prouoked the sad Father to shedde forth aboundance of teares: yet did hee especiallie condemne his Sonnes, whose pryde and arrogancie had thus caused their owne death. His Seruaunts vnderstanding the cause of his laments, went presentlie to the place where the Bretheren were discomfited, and there they founde two of them depriued of life, the thirde likewise in very great daunger, vnlesse speedy provision were made to preuent it. So causing him to be layde in a Litter, and the other two on a knightly Bære, they thus brought them to their Fathers Castell, where their Ladie mother met them with wonderful effuse of teares and lamentations, as one wold haue iudged her altogether boide of sence and discretion, then any way pertaker of humaine wit or reason. Like sorowe was made by one of her daughters, who loued her brethren very dærely, & after shee had somewhat pacified herselfe, she made a solemne vow to her mother, neuer to take rest in her mind and thoughts, vntil she were thorowly reuenged on the murtherer. Wherefore when her two dead brethren were buried, she departed against her Fathers will, accompanied onely wyth two Squires to seeke Belcar, intending to be auenged on hym by one meane or other.

The history of *Palmendos*.

CHAP. II.

How Belcar came vnkowne into Macedon, where he bare away the pryze of the Tourney, which King Florendos had appointed, to honour the marriage of the Princesse Denisa: and how hee discovered himselfe to Alderina, Daughter to the Duke of Pontus and Durace.



Elcar ryding in great haste towarde *Corderia*, finding y^e heate of the day very troublesome, he alighted at a faire fountaine to refresh himselfe awhile, where long he had not stayed, but in a pathe leading directly to y^e same place, hee behelde a company of knights and Ladies coming, attended on with a very sufficient trayne. It was the Duke of *Pontus* and *Durace*, who rode to *Macedon*, to the marriage which the King *Florendos* had made, betwene his Daughter *Denisa* & the King of *Thrace*, Nephew to the Wife of *Caniano*. This Duke had his espoused Lady *Laurana* with him, as also one of his fayre Daughters named *Alderina*, who rode foremost in the troupe, beguiling the time in talk with her Ladies: yet intending to stay tyll the heate was past, and in the meane while to sollace herselfe at the fountayne. There shee arryued befoze Belcar had put on his Helmet, so that she beholding his amiable countenaunce, his rich Armour, and yet hauing no company but one Squire: as a Ladye wyse and well gouerned she saluted him very graciously, wherat Belcar was somewhat amazed, doubting she knew of whence and what hee was. But soon shee did alter that opinion, and rather thinking this kindnes to procede of debonaire

The history of *Palmendos*. 5

debonaire curtise, imagined her of high calling, for which cause he made her humble reuerence, and seeing how manie followed this Lady, among whom he might peradventure be knowne, he called for his Horse, minding to ryde a contrarie waie. Alderina heereat somewhat moued, because shee desired to knowe of whence hee was, thus spake. Sir Knight, abide heere hardlie at your ease, and for our coming do not forsake a place so swete and delectable: you see the heate of the daie is such, as scantlie will permit yee to trauaile. If you goe to aduenture your fortune in the Tourney at *Macedon*, you may ride with the Duke my Father, who will be verie glad of your companie: & much more my selfe, because my good hap was first to finde you heere.

Belcar, humbly thanking her for this courtesie, made an excuse that he could not goe to *Macedon*, because he had urgent affaires els where, and whether he must trauel with all speede: wherefore taking his leave againe of her, hee rode which waie him liked best, onely to escape unknown of this companie. And meeting a Squire, that came after the traine with the cariage, he demaunded if he knew the Lord that rode by so well accompanied, to whom y^e Squire answered, that it was the Duke of *Pontus*, who rode to *Macedon*, to the feast of the King *Florendos*, for the marriage of his Daughter *Demisa*, and y^e the Duke had his saye Daughter *Alderina* with him, to see the Tounes and Tournament which was nowe prepared. So soone as Belcar heard these words, he presentlie coniectured, that the Lady which came first to the Fountain was the Dukes daughter, of whom report had made great commendation. Whereupon he determined to goe see this assemble, in the most secrete manner he could deuise: for he had time enough to accomplish his voiage. So forsooke hee the way to the Isle of *Carderia*, framing his iourney toward *Macedon*, and coming nere the Cittie, he ouertooke two Knights y^e rode to the Trumptie: they hauing riciprocallic saluted each other,

The history of *Palmendos*.

other, the two Knights demanded of Belcar if he came to Joust? I come (quoth he) to see what men at Arms will enter the field at this time of brave exercise. When let us ride together if you please, (said they) for wee left our Countries for the selfe same cause. Thus rode they on friendly together, and arriving at *Macedon*, they founde the field all covered with Tents, which belonged to the Noble personages that were come to the feast. For this cause, the two Knights gave in charge to their Squires, to provide their Pavillion, which was purposely brought with them, intreating Belcar likewise to keepe them company: whereto (because hee would not enter the Cittie) he gladly consented, thinking hee should find a more convenient lodging.

On the morrow there arrived the Duke of *Pontus*, before whom rode the King *Florendos*, as one willing to welcome his newe kinned: but *Alderina* shewed such majesty in countenance, as everie eye wondered at her rare perfections, notwithstanding, she was somewhat sad & pensive, the cause proceeding from her desire, to know the Knight she saw at the Fountaine, whom yet she could not by any meanes forgette. When Belcar behelde her arme in arme with the King of *Thrace*, and in what costly garments she was attired: hee imagined her more faire then when hee sawe her at the Fountaine, so that he resolutely intended, if hee could not finish the adventure of *Francelina*, to give himselfe to trauaile, and to enterprize such attempts, as might be thought worthy the love of this Ladie. All this while the Queene *Griana*, wife to the King *Florendos*, verie honourable entertained the Duchesse *Laurana*, & the young Princesse *Denisa* accompanying *Alderina*, would not forsake her till the marriage night.

On the morrow following, the King, the Queene and the newe married couple, came into the field to behold the Turney, where they were no sooner mounted on the scaffoldes, which were sumptuously adozned as becommed so great

The history of *Palmendos*. 6

great personages : but bothe on the one side and the other, they might behold great stoze of armed knights, chéefelie they that came from the Court of the Emperour, who because he could not be pzent at his Sisters marriage, sent manie of his balde Barons to honour the assemblie. The braue exploits in feates of Armes there performed, surpassed them of greatest reputation, & among other, the Dukes of *Anemon* and *Mensa* so well behaued themselves, as they had well néere gained the honour of the first assaulte, if Belcar had not suddainlie arriued, who staid a while to behold the order of the Fencibles, intending to helpe y^e weaker part, when at length he saide to his companions : follow me my freendes to assist the vanquished. So giuing his Horse the spurres, he ranne fiercelie with his Sworde drawn, against Bellequin the Sonne of Mosso, who dyd the greatest harme to the other side: and with him he met so brauelie in his carire, as Horse and man went bothe to the grounde. Afterward, he delt so roughlie with all them that durst méete him in the face, as in short time courage began to reuiue in those knights, who (in the iudgment of all the beholders) were befoze esteemed vanquished.

Which the Duke of *Anemon* perceiuing, and his companie to grow into such disgrace, he was therat exceedinglie offended, & thrusting himselfe among the thickest, gaue Belcar a very great stroke with his Sworde on the Helmet : for which he receiued speedie repayment, for Belcar, rasing himselfe in his stirrops, returned the Duke such a cruel blow through the sight of his Helmet, as he fel to the ground astonied betwéene his Horse legs. Then breaking in amidst the pzeasse, he gaue such sharpe entertainment to all that met him, as the King Florendos, and the other great estates that accompanied him, were diuinen thereby into great admiration : noz was he knowne to anie there but the Princesse Alderina, who being seated on the right hand of y^e Quéene Denisa, could not smother her thoughts, but thus spake. What thinke you (Madame) of the Knight

The history of *Palmendos*.

in Greene Armour: What doe I thinke answered the Quene, certes neuer did I see the man, who might equal or paragon himselfe with him, for that he alone hath done more in this Tourney then all y other: and greatly wold it content me, to know if he be descended of noble blode, as hee deliueys good testimonie of his knowledge in feates of Armes.

Madame, (quoth Alderina) I cannot thinke him lesse then you doubt of, in respect he concealeth himselfe so close lie, and wou!d not willingly be knowne of anie. Heer with she recounted how she founde him at the Fountaine, bare headed without his Helmet: and this I can assure you, of she, that as you confesse him valiant at Armes, so canne I witnes him of such bzaue feature and complexion, as there is no one absolute point wanting in him. Your speeches said the Quene, makes me much more desirous to knowe him, wherefore I will sende one to him for the same purpose. Then I beseeche your Maiestie, answered Alderina, to sende one of my Pages, who shall attend for him til the ende of the Tourney, and then coniure him in your name, that he send you worde of whence and what hee is: and if he stand lothe to be known, to resolute him from your Maiestie and me, that no liuing creature shal betwaine him by our meanes. Your counsell I verie well allowe, saide the newe married Quene, but I woulde that this Embassage should rather goe from you, because hee remembring what knowledge you had of him at the Fountaine, will happilie manifest himselfe vnto you rather then anie other. Heere, vppon Alderina called one of her Pages named Gracian, artificiallie instructing him in his errande to the Greene Knight: that vsing instant intreatie, accompanied with a singuler desire, he should gaine the meane to returne with his name and parentage.

All this while Belcar shewed such rare deedes of Chivalrie, as hauing well laboured the aduersarie, and none left that woulde confront him: hee went as Conquerour forth

The history of *Palmendos*. 7

forth of the *Lyses*, where he mette the two knights that came with him thither, who staied moze desirous to note his behauiour in the fight, then to intrude themselues in place of such daunger, and being not a little gladd of the honour he had done them, in that their companion bare a waie the palme of victorie, they rode on eache side of him towarde their Tent, being followed all the way by the *Princesse Page*, who awaiting due time to deliuer his message, tooke Belcars Horse by the bridle, and vsing such meanes of secrete conference, as Belcar stouped to heare him, hee softlie thus whispered with him. Sir Knight, I wold it might like you to ride aside a little, that I may deliuer a matter of secrete to you. He who was so courteous and affable as anie man coulde be, presentlie left his two companions, when Gracian thus began his message. My Lord, Alderina Daughter to the Duke of *Pontus & Durace*, hath at this time sent me to ye, to let you vnderstand, that she hath receiued iust cause of offence towarde you, in that shee comming to see this Tourney, you disdaind to make offer of your companie. Notwithstanding, if you wil graunt one request that she makes by me, forgetting al passed vngentlenes, shee will gladlie leaue further to misdeme of you. My Friend answered Belcar, the thing must bee very difficult or impossible, that I woulde not enterprise, to obtaine the gracious pardon of so choise a Ladie as is thy Distresse: it may bee, that I haue trespassed in duetie towarde her excellencie, but in sooth meere ignozance of her estate was the onclie cause. And when I left her at the Fountaine, farre was my intent from comming to this Tourney, in so much as I was thereto (in a manner) constrained, notwithstanding excuses of as great impoztance as those I vled to thy gentle Ladie.

It resteth now (quoth the Page) that you graunt my Distresse her earnest desire, which is, to knowe what you are, and why you conceale your selfe in such sorte: for beholding your noble and valiant behauiour, shee sets you

The history of *Palmendos*.

beyond all other in her conceit, and promiset^h withall, vnder the word of so great a person as shee is, not to reueale it to anie, if you be willing it should be so. Highlie may I commend my fortune, said Belcar, that a Princeesse so gentle and perfect, would daine to enquire after my poore deserts: and though I had vowed to concale my selfe from the whole world, yet would I straine courtisie wth that vow for her sake. Saie to her therfore, courteous Page, that my name is Belcar, Nephewe to the Emperoz of Constantinople, and the cause why I would be not willinglie be knowne to anie, is the small portion of time since I receiued my knight^hood: and hauing not yet done any thing wo^rthie my name, or to be accounted among the actions of hono^r, I determined not to publish ^{it} same, vntil I might do it with good testimony. Thou maist also assure her from me, y^e hencefo^rth I shall serue as her deuoted knight: hoping vnder fauour of her name to gaine such account, as I and mine shall remaine perpetually bound to her excellencie. And when I haue accomplished anie thing, that may be reputed wo^rthy honourable commendation, I wil come my selfe, and offer therewithall to her my hart, which hath receiued such an imp^ression of obeysaunce to her, as hencefo^rth it will attempt nothing but in her sweete regarde. Whose may she make heereof in commaunding me, for such is my desire to be imployed in her seruice, as were I assured my death consisted in the attempt, yet coulde not anie feare thereof withholde me. Let me further intreate her, not to disclose my name to anie one, because at this time I will not vⁱsste the King Florendos and the Quene, albeit I am so nere allied vnto them. With this aunswere returned Gracian to his Ladie, who attended his comming in great deuotion, that he was no sooner entred the Chamber, but she demaunded the successe of his message. All wel Madame, answered the Page, but you must keepe it very secret, because the knight himselfe hath so desired. Which after she had faithfullie promised to do, hee tolde her that
the

The history of *Palmendos*. 8

the knight was Belcar, Son to the King of *Hungaria*. May it be so: quoth the Quene Denisa, then is he my Nephew, and thinkes hee scozne to be knowne to vs: right gladlie would I haue seene him, for from our infancie we were nourished together: and well may you assure your selfe Madame Alderina, that he hath bene euermore benigne and courteous, which makes me not reioyce a little, that his fortune in Armes is equall with his other vertue, yet seeing he desires to passe vnkowne, let vs keepe the same so secret as we may. It were needles to demaund if Alderina were pleased, when she heard that Belcar was issued of so great and illustrious blood, offering himselfe withall so religiously her Knight: wherefore she now beganne extreamelie to affect him, and imprinted the remembraunce of him so liuelie in her spirit, as nothing might deface it againe. Thus hourly raunged loues passions in her harte, wherein they toke immediate ambush, so soone as she beheld him at the Fountaine.

CHAP. III.

Howe Belcar fearing to be knowne, departed secretlie from Macedon, & by the way met with a Knight whom he vanquished: and how he fought a cruell combat with him that defended the bridge, where the faire France-lina was enchanted.



As soone as Belcar hadde ended with Alderinaes Squire, hee minded to departe presentlie, fearing least the King Florendos would sende for him, as indeede he did soone after: for hee greatlve desired to knowe the knight, that bare away the honour of the Tourney. But bys expectation

The history of *Palmendos*.

expectation was greatlie deceiued, in that Belcar was already departed: whereof the King coulde not be perswaded, but that he missed his presence in the *Tryumphe* following, which hee compared with the pastime of little Children, in respect of the former day, when the unknown Knight performed matters of incredible valour. And albe it the *Queene Denisa* and the *Princesse Alderina*, heard euerie iudgment passing on the Knight, yet woulde they yeelde no other answer, but that hee seemed to bee one of the best esteemed Knights in the *Emperours Court*. Belcar then hauing graciously thanked his two companions, for the courtesie and humanitie they had vsed towarde him: tooke his frendlie farewell of them, sayning an earnest constraint, which commaunded his presence in matters of importance. The Knights lothe to lose so good a freende, made offer to accompany him in his trauaile: but hee excused their requeste with a necessarie denyall, wherewith they were pleased, and hee had libertie to depart.

And ryding along the way where hee met *Alderina*, he happened into a faire greene *Meddow*, where (because no lodging was nere at hand) he determined to make his hostage that night: but as hee thought to enter a sounde sleepe, a suddaine imagination caught hold on his senses, presenting them with the rare beautie of *Alderina*, during which passion, he was constrained thus to parle with himselfe. In soth Belcar, right well maist thou bee charged with discourtesie & ingratitude, hauing made so slender shewe of ciuilitie to so faire a *Princesse* as is the *Dukes Daughter of Pontus*: full well may it beserne thee to amend this fault, and by the dutifull repentaunce fitting a Knight, recouer the note of thy former blemishe. After many amorous discourses, he concluded (if hee could finish the aduenture of *Francelina*) to make choise of thys *Ladie onelie* as his *Wife*. And in these imaginations a sweete slumber overtooke him, wherin he continued till the next morning,

The history of *Palmendos*. 9

morning, when mounting on horsebacke, and ryding not past the space of two miles, hee mette with a knight at Armes: who demanded if hee came from *Macedon*, and if the nuptials of the Kings daughter were finished: Belcar answered, that they were now in performing, and if it liked him to trauaile thether, he should there finde matter enough to be imployed in. The knight left Belcar to his journey, and so without anie further speeches they departed.

But if you be desirous to know the man, it was Cardino, who departed from *Constantinople* with Colmelio, in search of the Damosell that brought such a suddaine message to the Emperour Palmerin, as you may reade in the last Chapter of his *Hystorie*. And albeit they had trauailed manie Countries to finde her, yet coude they not heare anie tydings of her: because she presentlie returned to the Castell of *Carderia*, from whence the *Fayries* sent her to the Court on that occasion, the intent thereof beeing no other, but onelie to extol and commend the future promise of *Palmendos*, Sonne to the Queene of *Tharsus* and the Emperour Palmerin, and that the knight who should come to finish the enchauntment of *Francelina*, might be receiued with greater honour and magnificence. Cardino had tried his fortune in this aduenture, but hee could speede no better then others had done before him, wherefore hearing of the feaste and open Court held at *Macedon*, he went as one doubtfull to come short to the Tryumphes, til Belcar had thereof certainlie resolved him. These knightes were not parted the space of a mile, but Cardino met the Damosell, who was Sister to the two Bretheren slayne by Belcar in the *Woode*, shee hauing followed him to the Court of the King *Florendos*, was aduertised by a Squire of his successe in the Tourney, and holue he rode the common high waie leading to *Carderia*, whereupon shee made good haste after him, and mette with Cardino sone after their departure, to whom she began in this manner.

The history of *Palmendos*.

1011 I beseech ye Gentleman to resolve me certaintie, if ye met a Knight in Greene Armour who, the most trayterous and disloyall man that this date liueth: for my Father hauing done him al the honour he could deuise, while he might be came & lodged at his Castle, and on the morrow morning (the more to content him) commaunded my Brother to accompanie him somewhat on his waie: Doe he, a most inhumaine and vnthankfull wretch, without anie occasion slewe two of them, and put the thirde in great daunger of life. And in this last cause I pursue his vylaine, in hope to meete with some wortheie man, who detesting such notorious and horrible ingratitude, will (in taking compassion on my greefe) reuenge this iniurie. So well could the traytresse couler her speeches, and set such a smoothe soyle on her cautelous prosopopey: as shee imprinted in the hart of Cardino, a dutifull regard to reuenge such wrong, wherefoze he thus answered.

1012 Damosell, if it be so as you say, the Knight cannot excuse himselfe, but that he is bothe a Traytor and a fellow, nor will the God of Heauen suffer him to escape unpunished in this world. The Damosell with terrible othes protested what shee had saide, desiring him to giue her ayde, if no other occasions might hinder her sute. Right gladlie (of Cardino) will I perforce me my duetie herein, for that I am a professed enemy to such offenders, and shal cause him to paie dearelie for his trecherie. So rode he with the Damosell after Belcar, but all that daie they coulde not ouertake him. On the morrowe they gotte sight of him on the edge of a Mountaine, whereat the Damosell not a little contented, desired Cardino now to rouse his forces, against the Tyrant that had so dishonoured her. Cardino promising to accomplish her desire, gaue the spurres to his horse and galloped after Belcar, and in a great brauado thus cried to him. Stay Traytour, vnwortheie name of a Knight, and receiue thy guerdon at my hand, for slaughtering them that entertained thee with all humanitie. Belcar hearing himselfe

The history of *Palmenidos*. 10

himselfe thus iniured, was immediatly prouoked into choller, and turning towarde him that touched him with disloyallie, hee thus sternelie answered. But little to thy profite will it bee, to pursue mee with such false and lying accusations. So clasping his helmet, he ran furiously against Cardino, who mette him with no lesse courage and braciety, and breaking his lance branely, somewhat scared the skinn of his enemies but Belcar welcomed him with so sound a salutation, as he fell downe with the saddle betwene his legges, so sore astonished with his fall as he was not able to stirre hand nor foote, which Belcar perceiving, rode on and there left him. The Damosell seeing Cardino in such woful plight, alighted from her palfrey, and with the helpe of his squire binding vpper his wounds, determined to bring him to some place for helpe, vsing the greatest shewes of lamentation that coulde bee. Ah heauen (quoth shee) why giue yee strength to wicked men against the good and vertuous? suffer not that disloyall villaine to doe anie further daunger, but rather giue some miserable ende to his vnworthie life. By this time the squire had mounted Cardino on his horse, & so they returned the same way they came, happening to the place where Belcar had broken his fall the morning before.

There they vnderstoode by the horse, that he was gone to proue the aduenture of Francelina, whether the Damosell would gladielie haue followed him: yet was she lothe to leaue Cardino in such daunger, and therefore abode there with him three daies, vsing all the meanes shee coulde to heale him, because for her sake he was so wounded: where we will leaue them, and returne to the onely thred of our Historie.

So long rode Belcar, that hee arriued within halfe a daies iourney of the Castell where Francelina was, the fortresse appertained to a Ladie y was a widdowe, who had two fayre Daughters, and a Sonne already knighted, of no lesse valour in seates of Armes, then learned and well

The history of *Palmendos*.

scene in diuers other disciplines. In this place was be-
meruailous well entertained, the Lady of the Castell bee-
ing a Woman of great honour, and her Daughters of be-
rie Courtlie and ciuill behaviour. After Supper, Belcar
entred into conference with them, and among manie other
things, enquired the cause that moued so many Knights
to attempt the aduenture of that Ile; when the Ladies
Some, who was named Lypes, answered him in this sort.
Welcome me Sir, I haue euermore accounted the man but
badly councelled, that takes such paines to trauell hether,
seeing it is so long time since any Knight arriued here, who
returned not without dishonour: because the action and ex-
plot of this enchauntment (so wonderfully compacted by
the three fairies) is of such efficacy, as it behoueth hym
that shall finish the same, to bee of most rare and exquisite
perfection.

But tell mee then (quoth Belcar) the state of this ad-
uenture, and wherein consisteth the greatest perill there-
of: for as yet haue I not met with anie one that could tell
me the truth, to satisfie my long and earnest desire. Bet-
ter then any other, answered Lypes, can I discourse the
same vnto you, because I haue often accompanied Knights
trauailing thither as you now doe, and scene many Com-
bat with him that defendes the entrance on the Bridge,
albeit to their great disadvantage. Know then gentle Sir,
that the Ile of *Corderia* stretcheth in diameter very far,
beginning on the one side enclosed with the Sea, and on the o-
ther are most wholesome Bathes and Ryuers, which hin-
der the salte waters from comming neere the Castell: at
the foote whereof is builded a meruailous artificiall bridge,
heeretofore accessible for all Knights errant, but since the
time that *Francelina* was enclosed within the great Dun-
gion, there might not enter anie straunger, those of the
island come and goe, but others not. Upon this Bridge are
erected three Turrets, one of them being in the middell,
and the other two at eyther ende. In the first is a Knight,
surpassing

The history of *Palmendos*. 11

surpassing the common stature and proportion of men, so fierce, hardie and couragious, as since the time of this enchantment, hee hath not bene dealt withall by any one, that coulde in ought disable his prowess: onely the Lorde of the Isle of *Lique* excepted, Son to him whome the Emperour Palmerin vanquished, when in the Tourney hee conquered the Sagittarie. He, being named Lynedes, was so resolute and magnanimous, as hee fought against the Knight of the Bridge from morning til night, and though the Combat was fierce and cruell, yet coulde no want of courage be discerned in him: which fel not out so with the gardant of the Bridge, because the losse of his blode so weakened him, as his hart began vtterly to dismay. But a huge ill fauoured Dwarfse, who neuer styes from the Beacon of the first Turret, to discover such Knights as come along the fielde, by winding an enchanted Horne that hunge about his neck, therewith so reuiueth y^e Knights strength again, as though he had but even then entered the Combat.

In thys sorte the fight continued till Sunne setting, whē Lynedes perceiuing his enemy to were feeble again, and that the Dwarfse as yet blew not his Horne: brought the Knight of the Bridge into such extremitie, as hee fell vppon his hands to the ground. Then running nimbly ouer the Bridge, he came to the Turret in the midst thereof, the Gates whereof being open before: clapt together at his arriuall wth such a fearefull trembling of y^e whole bygding, as Lynedes fell to the earth in a swoone. In this traunce hee remayned a great whyle, that his Squires fearing he was dead indeede, bemoaned their Maister wth very grauous lamentations: but when hee came to his former feeling, they sawe he was so cruelly wounded, as they caried him into his Tent, where thre daies he remained to reobtaine his health, and on the fourth, feeling himselfe able to sit on horseback, and not willing to make any further p^rose of thys aduenture, hee departed thence

The history of *Palmendos*.

forloving for his bad fortune. And this I tell ye for a certaintie, that when the Dwarfse sits as sentinel in the Lanthorne of y^e first Tower, perceiuing the Knight of the Bridge to haue the worst of the Combat: with the sound of his Horne he renues his strength, which is the cause that no man is able to deale with him. Seeing then thys enterpryse byngeth such danger, and oftentimes death withall: I could wyth that hereafter no man would attempt his owne ruine.

Don tell me matter of meruaile, answered Belcar, and right skylfull were the sayres in framing thys enchantment, so it shoulde seme, that they haue not enclosed the Lady there without great occasion, being assured y^e some Knight shal end the aduenture: to which each one trauielleth with this couragious hope, that hee is the man for whome it is reserved. For can I hee dissuaded from it, if manie heretofore haue fallen in that error, therefore no doubt of what shall happen can hinder my determination. If I happen in my tryall to be overcome, I shall but encrease the number of them, that could not attaine y^e height of their enterpryse, and no other dishonour can I receiue. Lypes earnestly intreated him to forbear the voyage, and so did his Sisters likewise, into whose grace he was greatly entred, especially the yongest, sayre and debonayre beyond the other: but all their perswasive reasons could not chaunge him, for Belcar hauing trauielled so farre for that purpose, might not by any occasion whatsoeuer bee wythdrawne from making proue of his fortune. When Lypes saw him so obstinatlie inclined, he made offer to beare him company, if it were but onely to shew him the way, which freendly courtesie Belcar accepted, so one the mornynge they mounted on horsebacke, and came to y^e Ile about mid-day. There was set vpp a riche Tent for thys young Prince, which the Sisters to Lypes hadde sent thither by thre Squires, with all necessary provision for his attempt, and in the euening Belcar went to view y^e Ile, regarding the

The history of *Palmendos*. 12

the Towre wherein *Francelina* was imprisoned: inuocating on God in his spirite, to endue him with such abilitie, as he might deliuer her, and beare away the honour of the aduenture. These imaginations so busied his thoughts as all that night hee coulde entertaine no other, but oftentimes thus talked with himselfe. Ah *Belcar*, why shouldst thou thus delay time, and not rather couragiously attempt the execution of thys enterpryse: admit thou want answerable force to a matter of such dignitie: yet should the renowne and generositie of thine ancestors stimulate thee heereeto, beeing Sonne to one of the best Knights that liueth thys day vnder the *Zodiack*, and Nephew to y great Emperour, with whom none may bee equalled. In these conceits hee consumed the night, and in the morning (hauiug Armed himselfe) came to the Bridge, where in a conuenient place neere the first Towre, he espied the Knight that defended the passage: whose huge stature somewhat amazed *Belcar*, and as he offered to steppe on the Bridge, the Knight very proudly thus spake.

Withdraw thy selfe Knight, vnlesse thou wilt enter fight with mee, for I am heere to denie passage to any. For no other cause come I, answered *Belcar*, but to try thy manhoode, and passe the Bridge if possibly I may. With these wordes he gaue the Knight such a sound stroke on the Helmet, as he thought the fire flew forth of his eyes, and so they beganne a long and dangerous Combat, the Knight giuing *Belcar* many cruell blowes with his yron Face, and he defending them so well as hee coulde: tyll hauing somewhat wearied his enemye, and thinking to doe as he heard of *Lynedes*, but the Knight gaue him such a forcible stroke on the shoulder, as he was constrained to sette one knee to the grounde to escape the fall. Herewith y Dwarfie blew his Hozne, which reioyced them within the Castell: albeit the Prince was astonied thereat, yet he dyssembled the same from being espied. The Knight hauing recovered his former strength, assayled *Belcar* with meruailous furie,

The history of *Palmendos.*

furie, who notwithstanding helde out couragiously: and one thing comforted him aboue all other, which was, that none of his aduersaries blowes gaue him any bleeding wounde, but brused his fleshe a little vnder his Armour, whereby he fought at his owne pleasure. Threes times the Dwarfie blew to animate his Châpion, by which meanes Belcar was ouer much laboured, because hee could finde no opportunitie to rest himselfe: but considering if hee shewd lesse valoure then hee had done, in vaine he might account his trauayling thether, & greatly would it redound to his shame, if the Emperour should be aduertised thereof. In the end, he had brought his enemy into such a state, as he got on the Bridge without any more resistance, and came to the Towre that stood in the middelt thereof, but the Gates closed together so furiously, as hee was smitten to the earth depriued of his senses. Lypes being glad that he had reconered the Bridge, came to him, and wyth the helpe of the Squires caried him into the Tent, where suddainly vnarming him, they applyed such remedies as brought him to his former senses. He had no sooner feeling of himselfe, but he entred into many ruefull lamentations, as well for his misfortune and dysgrace, as also wyth the payne hee felt of his aduersaries strokes, whereof his Armour being battered to peeces was a sufficient wytnesse. Comfort your selfe my Lozde (quoth Lypes) and let your wonted courage exile this anguish, remembryng that these eyght yeeres no knight came to the Isle, onely Lynedes excepted, that wunne like honoz as you haue done at this instant: greater reason haue yee then to cherish your fortune, then thus to condemne it with acclamations. Ah my frend, answered Belcar, little pleasure take I in this successe, for that my intent proceeded further, but seeing there is no remedy, I must with patience beare my shame. For of matters so deuillishly enchaunted, can seldom arise greater good: but cursed be the Fairies & their hellish charmes that deale so discourteously with poore trauailing knights.

CHAP.

The history of *Palmendos*. 13

CHAP. IIII.

Howe Belcar concluded to combat with all such as came to prooue the aduventure of Francelina : and howe (among other) he fought with the Marquesse of Trosse, whom he vanquished, and after ward with Tirendos, to whom he made himselfe knowne.



Elcar beeing indifferently calmed by the courteous behaviour of Lypes, determined to recover his passed soyle by actions of Chivalrie, and therefore resolved to continue in that place, to combat with al such as came to trie the aduventure : but to his intent hee added this principally, y^t what deeds of Armes he there performed, or in anie other place where he might be employed, all should be for the loue of Alderina, Daughter to the Duke of *Pontus*, whom aboue all other he meant most constantly to loue. And if his fortune were to be vanquished by anie knight, he woulde then forthwith returne to the Court of the King *Florendos*. This disseigne he discovered to Lypes, who was not a little glad therof, saying, that he should apprehend great matters by his enterprise, because continually many good knights resorted thither. And because (quoth hee) you are so resolutlie minded, nothing shal make mee to forsake your company : but to behold the knightly Chivalrie, which I am out of doubt to see executed by you. I offer my selfe to accompanie you in al loyall service. Nowe the better to furnish their wants, hee sent to his Mothers house for all kind of prouision, y^t might agree with the time of their abode there. By this time

D. 1.

Belcar

The history of *Palmendos*.

Belcar founde himselfe able to beare Armes, and therfore went to take his place of charge, at what time the *Parquesse of Trosse* came to hazarde his fortune. This *Parquesse* was a braue and hardie man at Armes, & although he came from his Countrey wel accompanied wth knights, Squires and Pages: yet caused hee them to stay a pretie distance from this place, and came thether but wyth one Squire that caried his Launce. When Belcar sawe him make so couragiously toward the Bridge, he mounted on horsebacke, and comming to him, thus spake.

Gentleman, you may not passe here, except you first trie the Jouste with mee, because I haue established heere such a Lawe, as no knight shall haue battaile with him that kept the Bridge, vntil hee haue first dismounted me: for hauing receiued some foyle in this place, not manie daies since, I wil not suffer anie one to preuaile in this aduenture, vnlesse hee bring me first into subiection. Great boldnes is this in you (answered the *Parquesse*) that you will take in hande to beare a burthen of such waight: but I thinke you doe it to this ende, that you would depart hence with greater shame and confusion, then ever you sustained heeretofore. What quarrell (quoth Belcar) shall our Swozdes soone discide, and so without any more speeches they fell to the Combat, wherein the *Parquesse* shewed verie knightlie and gallant behauiour, albeit Belcar cast him from his Saddle, and afterwarde fought with him on foote a long while: but in the end the *Parquesse* was vanquished, and vnderstanding the name of his Conquerour, returned to the place where hee left his companie, and after he had recovered better health, he rode strait to *Macedon*, where he recounted his ouerthrowe by Belcar. Of these newes the King *Florendos* and *the Quene* were verie ioyfull, saying they had a Nephew that was so named, wherefore they desired to knowe what Armes hee wore: when the *Parquesse* tolde them hee was in Greene Armour, Without question (quoth the King) it was the same knight

The history of *Palmendos*. 14

Knicht that wunne the honour of the Tourney, and went hence secretlie least he shoulde bee knowne, wherewith I cannot be iustlie offended, because bothe in this enterprize and knightlie valour, he resembleth his woorthy Father King Frycoll.

Each one in Court was well pleased with these tydings, but above all other the Princesse Alderina, because she had bequeathed his remembraunce to the secreete closet of her hart, and as the daies, so her louelie affections to him increased, in respect of the great praises was euerie where bruted of him, which made manie woorthy Knights to aduenture their fortune with him, with whose conquest hee still gaue grace to his owne report. But let vs now return to the Damosell that folowed Belcar, to bee reuenged for her Bzetherens death, shee seeing Cardino was indifferently recovered, tooke her leaue of him, because shee intended to prosecute her enemie. It so fell out, that Tirendos, Sonne to the Duke Eustace, who trauailed to finde his companion Belcar, arrived at the same lodging where the Damosell was, and noting her complaints, which shee could deliuer verie artificiallie: he tooke compassion on her, promising to assist her in what he could. Demaunding the cause of her sorrowfull lamentations, she tolde him, howe she had two Bzetheren trayterously slayne, by a disloyall knight who her Father entertained into his Castell, and she pursuing the murtherer, met a courteous knight that undertooke to reuenge her cause: yet his misfortune was such, as hee was likewise dangerously wounded, which made her græfes the moze impatient. These flattering gloses so beguiled Tirendos, as hee againe made her promise of his ayde, enquiring of her where the wounded knight was?

My Lord (quoth she) he is heere in his Chamber, mœteli well recovered by my pains and diligence. No sooner was Tirendos entred the Chamber, but hee immediatlie knew Cardino, for whose hurt he was a great deale moze

The history of *Palmendos*.

Sorrowfull: and therefore vowed to him and the Damosell, if euer he met the Knight to bee reuenged on him. After many courteous embracings and kind speeches, he told Cardino, how Belcar and hee were bothe knighted in one daie, by the Emperour of *Constantinople*, from whence hee very suddainlie and secretlie departed: and euer since haue I followed in searche of him, yet in no place can I heare anie tydings of him. What Armes doth hee beare? saide Cardino. White, as I take it, answered Tirendos, and such as are bothe rich and costlie. No such Knight haue I seene, (quoth Cardino) happilie he may be now at *Macedon*, at the magnificent nuptialles of the Princesse *Denisa*.

Whether would I goe, sayd Tirendos, had I not past my promise to this Damosell: no: can my minde enioye anie quiet, untill I haue found the Knight that so wronged her and you. All this night they were merie together, especially the Damosell for Tirendos his promise, because hee seemed a man of sufficient valour to accomplish her desire. On the morrow they tooke their leaue of Cardino, & iournied toward the Isle of *Carderia*, where they arriued as Belcar was managing his great Horse: and no sooner had the Damosell espied him, but she presentlie knew him by his Armour, wherefore dissembling pittifull looks, shee thus spake to Tirendos. Beholde Sir the Traytour that did my Wetheren to death, I thinke the heauens stayed him in this place, that vengeance might be taken on him for the shame he hath done me. Tirendos was not a little glad heereof, because he should now make the first tryall of his Chualrie. But Belcar (who knewe him by his Armour, being the same wherein he receiued his order) was scant well pleased with his presence, because hee doubted that he was sent to finde him: notwithstanding, he would make a little proue of him in the Ioust, and therefore hee came to him with these words. You may passe no further this way Sir Knight, because I stand here to make denial thereof.

The history of *Palmendos*. 15

thereof. Little count shall I make answered Tirendos of such as thou art, that trayterously murderest Gentlemen, who gaue thee welcome beyond thy deserte, which I wyll cause thee buy full deere lie. What would I faine see, sayde Belcar, if it be in thee to make mee confesse that which I neuer thought, much lesse committed. Thou liest as a homicide, answered Tirendos, I wil make good what I haue sayd, therefore get ye to your toles. Heere with they gaue the spurres to their Horses, and met very valiantly together, so that with breaking their Launces, they gaue each other a little wounde, Belcar losing his stirrops, and Tirendos cast forth of his saddle to the ground: but recovering himselfe presently, he came against his enemy with his sword drawne, saying. Alight Sir you were best, or I shall slay your Horse.

What will I gladlie doo (quoth Belcar) but it shall bee to embrace ye, for I haue no will to enter Combatte wyth ye. Alas Sir, said Tirendos, it is no time now to scoffe, albeit I am from my Horse, I am not vanquished. Great pleasure took Belcar to reason with his singular good friend, and alighting from his Horse, thus replied. I speake for your good (Sir) if you can see it: but seeing reason wil not rule you, I am content to deale with you a little. Tirendos somewhat offended at this fall, beganne to strike at Belcar very roughlie: but he who was lothe to wrong his friend, threw his sword and shield to the ground, and with open Armes came to embrace him, saying. My perfect friend Tirendos, I haue heretofore had experience of thy valiant behaviour, wherefore forgive thy Brother Belcar, for not acquainting thee with my departure from *Constantinople*, yet was I assured that thou wouldest follow in searche of me.

Howe now? quoth Tirendos, are you then my Lord and loving frende Belcar? in sooth the error committed, was only ignorance of you: put off your Helmet that I may be resolved, for your disguised Armour made mee

The history of *Palmendos*.

mistake p2. So casting downe their Helmes, they embraced each other verie courteously, when Tiredos thus spake to Belcar. Hardlie can I be perswaded my Lorde, that you would consent to such treason as this Damosell hath entommed me withal. Declare I pray you (O Belcar) whacker aryseth this slander, for an other Knight (who I thinke I haue slayne or soze wounded) pursued mee wyth the like quarrell: doubtlesse this Damosell is some badde Woman, to accuse me with anie such disloyaltie. She told me, sayde Tiredos, that you beeing honourably entertayned at her Fathers Castell, where one night you were verie frendlie lodged: on the morrow her three Wytheren bare you company on the waie, and two of them without any cause you murdered, leauing the thirde in verie great danger.

Oh trayterous Damosell, answered Belcar, what an euident slander hath she rayled on me: and herewith hee rehearsed the whole discourse, according as you haue read it in the first Chapter of this Booke. Whce seeing the two Knights agree thus frendlie, with the teares in her eyes came forth these speeches. Miserable and vnforsunate that I am, what a subtil collusion doe I heare: this Knight is as false and disloyall to me in not reuenging my shame, as the murderer that hath so highly wronged me: but seeing I am thus circumuented, and hee a periured wretche by breach of his promise, vnlesse I speedilie die, I will cause him to repent it, and hee sufficiently reuenged on them both.

So galloped she the same waie shee came, and Belcar with Tiredos went into the Tent, where they discoursed together on many matters: Tiredos declaring howe Cardino was the other Knight that fought in the Damosels cause, for which the Prince was greatly offended with himselfe, and to weare away that conceit, acquainted Tiredos with his fortune at the Castell, and of the task he had taken in hande, which he liked so well, as he concluded likewise

The history of *Palmendos*. 16

likewise to beare him companie. Thus Lypes and they two remained there together, oftentimes resorting to visite his mother and Sisters, who would not suffer them to want any thing: and such was the fame of Belcars victories, as the whole Realme of *Macedon* and the Emperours Court of *Greece*, was cloyed with the dailie reports thereof. But heere will we leaue these Champions awhile, and speake of the good Knight *Palmendos*, Sonne to the Emperour *Palmerin*, and the Queene of *Tharsus*.

CHAP. V.

How Palmendos vnderstanding that he was Sonne to the Emperour Palmerin, caused himselfe to be armed Knight. And how he intreated licence of the Queene his Mother to goe see Constantinople, which at length verie hardlie he obtayned, and what happened thereon.



Arefully did the Queene of *Tharsus* nourish her younge Sonne *Palmendos*, whom shee had by the Emperour *Palmerin*, when he folowed the exercise of Armes and was entertained by the Admiral *Alfarano* in the Realme of *Pasmeria*, as you may reade in his worthy History. This Childe, as he grewe in yeres,

so did he increase in all vertuous behauiour, beeing vnable to shadowe his royall descent: yet to hinder his desyre from searche after his Father, (the Queene and all the Nobilitie so intirely affecting him) no knowledge might bee giuen him thereof, least by that meane he should become a Christian. And that he might be instructed in those heroycall qualities, which beseme a Prince of so high calling,

The history of *Palmendos*.

the Queene committed him to the charge of the Brother to the deceased King her husband: a Knight of great will, done and valour, by whom hee was so worthilie educated, as he wonne the loue of euery one ingenerall. Rigour he would requite with mercie and clemencie, and charitie he preferred all his actions: notwithstanding, as he shewed courteous and benigne countenance towards the good, so did he sternelie and seuerelie oppose himselfe against the badde, so that by his exquisite prudence and choyle care in honourable causes, in his youth hee would learne to manage the affayres of the Realme, wherein he shewed himselfe so quick of spirite and susceptible, as he wered to bee such a politique oeconomie, that the Queene intended to put the royall Government into his handes. If hee were thus enriched with all perfect vertues, nothing wanting in him for braue constitution of bodie, wherof he made no shewe of pryde or presumption: but became so famous thzough all the neyghbour Marches and limitrophes of *Tharsus*, as the very best would come to offer him theyr service.

The Courte was filled with resort of Nobles & others, for beside the royall nature hee brought from his Mothers wombe, according to the Idea and celestiall influence of his constellation, hee was bozne and naturally inclined to Armes, which made him euermore conuerse with y^e most skilfull that way addicted. But one day before he was armed Knight, a very aged, decrepitate & ouer-spent woman, came and late down on a steppe in the Porche of the Pallace, attyzed in such pooze Garments, as her naked fleshe was seene in manie places: and there late she trembling in such sorte, as though her soule were ready to forsake her bodie. Such as passed in & out the Court, were greatly amazed heereat, and moued to pittie her case very much, so that *Palmendos* came himselfe to behold her: and seeing she would vse no speeches to him, went in againe and late downe to Dinner. Afterwarde, comming forth to walke
abroade

The history of *Palmendos*. 17

abode for his delight, he found her sitting there still in the same place, wherefore hee called his Cozin Ozalio to him, who was donne to his Uncle and Tutor, saying. Can we not vnderstand what this poore olde Woman would haue? Ozalio as desirous as the Prince, came to the olde Woman, demanding of whence she was, and if she stood in neede of anie thing: but shee without answering one worde, gaue him a berie frowning countenance, and after ward scornfullie turned her back towards him, wherewith Ozalio somewhat offended, gaue her such a spurne with his foote, as she tumbled quite beside her seate, wher at Palmendos and his Lordes merdie laughed: but theyr pastime was soone altered into admiration, for after the Woman arose againe, shee seemed of such huge deformed stature, as eache one was amazed that had beheld her before, and turning her selfe angerlie towards the Prince, vsed these speeches.

Oh Palmendos, little regardest thou to resemble the Emperour of *Constantinople* thy Father, whose gentlenes and sweetnes stretcheth as wel to the meanest persons, as them that are Lordes and of great account. What gainest thou in reioycing at the iniurie done mee by thy knight? I pray that the great imperious Monarch Cupid, (or shee with lifting her eyes and handes to heauen) may so cruelly wound thy hart with the looue of faire *Francelina*, and cause thee to conceiue such gracious thoughtes of her: as thou maist leaue this idle and delicious life thou ledest, to winne the honour that is got with paine and trauaile. So did thy Father heeretofore for the Princesse *Polynarda*, whom he loued so religiously, as with the dexteritie and strength of his bodie, he assaied to gaine y^e reward which Fortune prouideth for her cheefest fauourites: whereon imperially he is now amounted, accompanied with y^e greatest felicitie, that can happen to anie one vnder this Hemisphere. Leauethen these wanton and Courtlie surfetings, wherewith thy Mother labourerh to containe thee, and

The history of *Palmendos*.

nowe beginne to manage Armes, which may make thy name perpetuall, and yeelde the rewarde of immortal glorie: for it will redound to thy great shame, being Sonne to so rare and invincible a knight, not this way to imitate his laborious dedes. And when I shall see thee thorowlie wrapped in the passions of love, I will thinke my selfe satisfied with reuenge of the dishonour, which thou hast suffered to be done to me in thy presence.

The olde Woman so breaking off, immediately vanished away, to the great terrour of all the beholders, especiallye of the young Prince *Palmendos*, whose senses were for a while estranged, and walking bype and dolne musing on the olde Womans wordes, his hart was so enamored with the loue of her he knew not, as he was enforced thus to commune with himselfe. What may the Ladie be, with whom (at the report of this Woman) I find my selfe so distraughted: Doubtles if her words be no fables, but that I am Sonne to the Emperour of *Constantinople*, it behooueth me to enterprize such actions, as I may be iudged somewhat to resemble him. While his spirit was thus busied with diuersitie of these thoughts, and no one daring to interrupt him: *Ozario* went into the *Quenes Chamber*, and telling what had happened, she was therewith greatly displeased.

Immediatlie she came downe into the great Hall, and finding her Sonne thus perplexed, tooke him by the hand, causing him to sitte downe by her, and then began to him in this manner. I knowe not my Sonne what follies (it should seeme) the olde Wagge hath troubled your minde withall: but refraine from giuing credite to them, and I shall tell yee the verie trueth of all. Madame answered *Palmendos*, I am certaine you will not dallie with mee, notwithstanding, I cannot but meruaile, that you would be all this while conceale the originall of my bythe: for the Emperour *Palmerin* being such a woorthy accomplished knight, as he is esteemed of euerie one, little occasion haue

The history of *Palmendos*. 18

I of misdaine to be his Sonne, and you much lesse to keepe it from me. Wherefore I humbly intreate your Maiestie, to resolute me faithfullie of this present doubt, to the end, if it be so: I may thewe my selfe forwarde in duetie, in causing the bud to flourish, that came from such a noble & vertuous stalk. And feare not that for his sake I will abandon you: because it is impossible for me to leaue the Land wherein I haue hether to liued, for a strange opinion which I am ignorant in.

— Ah my Sonne (quoth the Queene) the Gods so inspire and direct your desseignes, that you may perfectlie accomplish what you haue promised: for the onely feare to lose your companie, hath caused me conceale the thing you are so desirous to know. But seeing you haue hearde what I can no longer dissemble: assure your selfe my Sonne, that the olde Woman hath tolde nothing but trueth. Whereupon she recounted the whole Historie, howe to haue issue by such a peerlesse Prince (imitating Thalestria, Queene of the *Amazons*, who for like cause acquainted her selfe with the valiant King Alexander) she by the counsell of a wise Magitian, amourosly beguiled the Emperour Palmerin. Lastlie, shee intreated him not to forsake her while she liued, because her life was onelie prolonged by his presence.

Great matters haue you tolde me, answered the young Prince: the Emperour then knowes not that hee hath a nie Childe by you? No verilie, replied the Queene, nor would I he should know for the whole world. Nor can hee (I thinke) vnderstand it by anye, saide the Prince, yet (in mine opinion) I count it necessarie, that one day I should goe see my Father: but trust me Madame, it shall not bee without speedie returne, because I am determined not to leaue you, or giue ouer (with my will) the Countrey and Kingdome which the heauens haue appointed me to rule and gouerne. Thus reasoned the Mother and her Sonne on diuers matters, and hencefoorth the Prince shewed

The history of *Palmen*dos.

himselfe more cheerefullie disposed, intending very shortly to be armed knight, and to be called the knight of Cupid, bearing for his devise an hart wounded with an Arrow. For himselfe hee provided an Armour as redde as blood, and for Ozalio, whom hee loved as his Brother, a faire white Armour, and were bothe knighted by Ozalio his Father, who was one of the best knights in all those parts.

Having thus received their order, a very sollemne feast was made in honour thereof, during which time, *Palmen*dos gave away sundry sumptuous gifts: yet could he not be unmindfull of *Francelina*, or forget one iote of the olde *Utomans* words, because he had lodged them so neere his hart, as they were a martirdome (in manner) to him. For sale wherof he minded to goe see *Greece*, as also to visite the Emperour his Father, and learne some tydings of his unknowne Ladie: for he perswaded himselfe, that the olde *Utomans* speeches grew upon no small occasion. And finding the Queene his Mother one afternoone at good ley, sure, among divers other proceedings betwene them, *Palmen*dos earnestlie entreated her to graunt him one request: which the Queene (who loved him as her proper life, and not thinking he wold have desired any such thing) agreed unto verie willinglie. Then woulde I good *Damie* (quoth he) not have you conceiue any displeasure, if I make a breife voyage to *Constantinople*, to see the Emperour my Father, and the good knights in his Courte: for since the time you assured mee that I was his Donne, my desires have beene unmeasurable to trauaile this iourney. Yet I sweare, by the sincere & inuolable faith, which the Child aboue all other oweth to his Mother, to returne againe with all possible speede. Alas my Donne (quoth the Queene) giuing a bitter sighe, your words haue so sharpe pierced my hart, as me thinkes I feele my very thred of life cut in sunder, the feare of this present extremitie, withheld me from uttering mine owne minde: but seeing

The history of *Palmendos*. 19

I cannot hinder what I haue willingly consented to, with what patience I can I will beare my misfortune. One thing yet would I commend to thee, if zeale and loue to thy Mother may sollicit anie compassion: that thou wouldest return to the place of thy birth so soone as thou canst, that mine eyes beholding thee once more before I die, my soule may passe with greater comfort into another world. So helpe me God, answered Palmendos, as I intende not to breake the least of your commaundements, nor will I deceiue you in my short and speedie returne. With then my Sonne, quoth the Queene, you will needes undertake this voyage, I would aduise ye to haue good store of hardie Knights with you, that your entertainment by the Emperour may be the more honourable. Madame, (quoth he) I am certaine my Lorde will not esteeme any thing the more of me for my companie, because it shall suffice that I am King of *Tharsus*, wherein consisteth the poynt of my renowne: as for any paine of trauaile, some report of good successe in Chivalrie shal wipe that away. For (as you are not ignorant therof) his Maiestie trauailed alone thzough the world, opposing his unconquerable mind against al adventures whatsoeuer: yet did y^e diuine bountie euer more sheeld him from perill and death, and as he, so manie other famous Kings and Potentates. What empzise was more dangerous then y^e of Iason, when he won the Golden fleece in the Ile of *Cholcos*? or that of y^e gentle Champion *Theseus*, when he conquered the Minotaur in the inextricable Labirinth of *Crete*? yet the Gods defended them in all their attempts. In my time (Mother) I haue seene, that poore and simple Ships haue sailed in the Sea, with great fortune in tempests and outrage, and at length haue returned home richlie furnished: on the contrary I haue noted, that sundry gallant vessels, haue cut with full sayle thzough calme and quiet Seas, fauoured both with winde and wether, and at the verie entraunce of the Hauens mouth, haue splyt on some Rocke, or sustayned other mis-

The history of *Palmendos*.

chance. Needles then were my feare of the Sea or Fortune, because (where ere I goe) Death tracks mee as my shadowe, and dare not strike till he be commaunded: therefore I am thus determined, to haue none with me but Orzilio and two Squires, because we wil trauaile as meane Gentlemen, and try our manhoode with the Knights of Europe, before the Emperour shall haue any knowledge of me.

The Queene would no more contrarie his intent, but referred all things to his owne disposing, wherefore Palmendos hauing sent for the cheefe Lordes of the Realme, declared to them openlie his minde: giuing them this expresse charge, to obey the Queene his Mother, & his Vncle, whom he left as Lieutenant generall of the Province in his absence. They all sozie that hee would so soone depart, knewe not howe to hinder it hee being so resolute: notwithstanding, they promised to fulfill his commaunde, wishing him a tranquile & prosperous navigation. Soone after the Queene went into her Cabinet, where her hand discharging the office of the tongue, shee wrote a freendlie Letter to the Emperour, which shee accompanied wth a Ring, like to that she gaue him at his departure: to the ende that by this Jewell, Palmendos might be the sooner known of him.

Shippe and all thinges readie for this voyage, hee tooke his leaue of his Lordes and Subiects, and after ward of the Queene his Mother: who byting in her greefe so well as she could, deliuered him the Ring and the Letter, the contents whereof thus followeth.

The

The history of *Palmendos*. 20

The Letter of the Queene of

Tharsus, to the Emperour

Palmerin.

To the most illustrious & famous *Palmerin d'Oliva*,
Emperour of Constantinople, the most loyall of Louers,
most accomplished of Knights, and aboue all the Prin-
ces that inhabit the center of the earth: the Queene of
Tharsus his intire & perpetuall freend, sendeth health,
humblie kissing the hand of his Maiestie.



If the Heauens had so bountifully bestowed
those perfections on mee in my cradle, which
the most accomplished Ladies make their vauit
of, as Fortune was afterward fauourable and
courtous vnto me, in adorning my head with
the royall Diademe of *Tharsus*: needeles had my recourse
bene to Charmes or Magick (a fauoured and fortunate
Prince) when I sought your acquaintance in the Realme
of *Pasmeria*. But sith by that small talent wherewith na-
ture endowd me, the Destinies graunted mee the sweete
aspect of your loue, after I behelde you with our Admirall
Alfarano: my pristinat vertue could not preuaile against
vniquenchable desire, because the fame of your renowne
was so caracted in my spirit, as my former chaste and
bathfull continencie, was in the ende irrecoverably conta-
minate. Yet can I not repute this chaunce as matter of
unifortune, seeing the heauenly powers were so benigne,
as from that acte proceeded *Palmendos* our onclie Sonne:
from whom I still hidde that you were his Father, albeit
by strange meanes he was not long since aduertised ther-
of, from which time hee hath so preuailed by intreaties, as
he hath constrained me (not without great greefe, & doubt-
full feare neuer to see him againe) to suffer him come see

The history of *Palmendos*.

his noble Father. And hardlie could I peeke thereto, but that my confidence in you is such: as you will quickly returne him againe, so soone as you haue seene and knowne him for your Sonne. At this accident I hope you will not be offended, when you consider the world enioyes a young Prince: whose vertuous qualities and good carriage of himselfe. p̄sage his future commendable fortune. In this sort haue I sent him, accompanied onelie with his Cozin, because hee thus perswaded me: that when you trauailed the worlde, it was commonly alone, & as a simple knight errant. And least you should be scrupulous in acknowledging him your Sonne, beside the coniectures of his phisnomie, p̄portion of bodie, and other your perfect resemblances: I haue by him sent you a Ring, like that which I gave you when you parted from mee. Which Ringes if you compare together, you will remember the wordes I spake wanted no relation. Once more I coniure ye, by the honour and reuerence of the firme loue, you alwaies bare so religiously to the onely Distresse of your hart: that you will quicklie returne our Sonne againe, that hee may yet be some comfort to my following date of time, while I enioy my beeing in this nether Region.

The most humble of your freendes,
the Queene of *Tharsus*.

CHAP.

The history of *Palmendos*. 21

CHAP. VI.

Howe Palmendos by meanes of a tempest on the sea, was brought to the Isle of Delphos, where after hee understood the aduenture of the Temple, he went on shore. And howe he afterward conquered the Sonne to the Gyant Baledon, who helde the Islande in forcible subiection.



Almendos with Ozalio & their Squires embarked, the Mariners hoysed saile and sette a waie merilie, the Prince commaunding the Pilotte to make towards *Thrace*, because he hoped to heare some tidings there of *Francelina*, who he had made cheefe Mistresse of his affections. But after they had sayled

halfe a daie, a violent contrarie winde arose, which drove them three daies and three nights so furiously, as the Mariners coulde scant tell in what part they were. At length this rough and boysterous tempest ceased, when Palmendos beeing desirous to know in what Country they were: was answered by the Maister that they were in *Europe* and the *Mediterranian Sea*, verie neere to the Isle of *Delphos*, where after so long and uncomfortable wether, Palmendos wold goe on land to refresh himselfe. In this Isle the Pagans were often wont in ancient time, to come and visite the Temple of *Apollo*, as also to consult with his Oracle, and at this time was Lord thereof a Gyant named *Baledon*, the most fierce and cruell Tirant, that liued in all those three parts of the world. This Gyant had a Son no lesse valiant then himselfe, and after hee had by force
ff. 1. gotten

The history of *Palmendos*.

gotten this Island, hee builded a strong Castell on a little Promontorie: disceuding so artificiallie into the Sea, as hauing a huge Roke on either side thereof, it was wel defended from the extremitie of the water. No other Porte for landing woulde he permitte in all the Island, then this onelie, hemde in with the two Rocks, betweene which hee had fastened a great chaine of yron, which commonlie laye somewhat shallowe in the water. But when anie Vessel came to anker in that Porte, certaine villaines which hee kept in Towres for the purpose, woulde hoyle them vpp with the chaine in such sort, that they could depart no more thence except the Gyant pleased: and thus woulde he rob and spoile all that landed there, that al those parts lamented to heare of his villanie. If happilie he mette with any Knights who resisted his will, then woulde he outrage the by force of Armes, and afterward put them into an infectious stinking Pryson. The Merchants and others that vsed traffique, from them woulde he take all they had, and afterward deliuer them ouer to a most cruell death, so that all such as had notice of his tyrannie, fled that place as the dangerous Gulfe of *Caribdis*.

Yet notwithstanding, there was in this Island a great aduenture, for in the time of the Gentiles, there inhabited a welthy Prieste, a Magitian and wonderfull inuestigator of hidden thinges, hee was high Priest of the Sanctuary in the Temple, as also he had the generall administration through the whole Province: he hauing a comlie beautiful Daughter, endued with al vertues requisite in a Virgin, and her he gaue to the seruice of the Oracle. It so fell out, that the Duke of *Feria*, a very gentle and gracious youth, became enamoured of her onely by report, for oftentimes he had hearde her commended, to excēde in beautie the choysest Dames of that Countrey: wherfore he made sundrie requests to enioy her as his Wife, but all his labour was to no purpose, because her father would not part with her. And as it often happeneth, that the Messenger who

The history of *Palmendos*. 22

who is twyle or thryse sent to one place, to obtaine a matter earnestlie desired, will deuise what meanes hee can for the behoofe of his Maister, moze to escape the shame of refusal, then for anie great good will (happilie) to the partie: euen so fell it out with the minister of this sute, for seeing hee went and returned so often without auaile, hee gotte one daie to speake with the Maiden herselfe, whome he laboured with so manie perswasions, and whetted on to ioyne in a secrete marriage: as shee became rauished with the loue of the Duke, and promised if his Maister coulde cunningly steale her from her Father, she would goe with him whether he pleased.

The Duke not a little glad of this aunswer, presentlie iournied to the Island, where being arriued, hee aduertised the Damosell: that he would stay for her in a conuenient place nere her fathers Pallace, whether she should not sayle to come, so soone as the silent night had brought euery one asleepe. But the Prieste, who by meanes of his Magick foresaw all these practises, and knowing the place where the Duke of *Feria* staid for his Daughter: caused two fierce enchanted Lions to discend from y^e Mountaines, which ranne with rauinous mouthes on the vnproviden Duke, and he no way able to defende himselfe, they rent and tore him cruellie in peeces. Which pittifull spectacle whē his Squire that came with him behelde, he gaue such a lamentable shriek, as the Damosell (whose eyes & eares were carefullie waking) easilie hearde it. In like sorte did diuers others of the house, who came forth with lighted Torches to vnderstand the cause: but the Mayden hearing too soone in what case they founde the Duke, came running from the Castel as a mad Weman to accomplish the Sacrifice. Such was her greefe to beholde her belovd Husband thus cruellie massacred, as she taking his Rapi-er, sette the pommel thereof to the grounde, and placing the point opposite to her hart: with meruailous violence threw herselfe thereon, as one disdainig to liue, being

The history of *Palmendos*.

robbed of her loue. Nevertheless, she was herein deceived, for the sword passing through her right side, she fell upon the dead corpes, and so lay awhile alive, breathing forth many greivous sighes and lamentations. And finding in her bosome a sheete of paper, with her owne blood she wrote twelue moornefull verses in forme of an Epitaph: then seeing her latest howre to hasten on, with ruefull mones she deliuered these speeches. Seeing it is so, my sweete choyse and paragon of courtesie, that for my sake thou hast endured this martyrdome: it will remaine as a gall in my conscience, that I did not end the funeralles according to thy desert. And that my father may knowe what wrong he hath doone vs, I will leaue some occasion for his too late repentance: yet I desire no other recompence, but causing our bodies to bee buried in one Coffin, he will suffer (for a perpetuall remembrance of this stratageme) this Epitaphe to be engrauen thereon.

*Forbear mine eyes more to bemoane thy freend,
Whose peerles vertues time nor death can staine:
Despise the man that thus procurde his ende,
And hath (withall) his onely daughter slaine.
Ah angrie fate, and planet most unkinde,
What more inhumaine act could ye deuise:
Then step betweene the hart, the eye and minde,
And pierce that vaine which could them all suffice?
But sith in life our fortune was so bad,
To misse of that which we desired most:
Yet now in death the same is frelie had,
Wherefore of loue in death we make our boast.*

This Epitaphe ended, shee yeelded the humaine tribute to nature, for after ward her bodie made no motion of vitall meuing: and it cannot be esteemed as fabulous that loue should cause the death of anie one, because in auncient Histories, we may finde innumerable of recent & moderne examples

The history of *Palmendos*. 23

examples thereof. But returne we to the Priest, who vnderstanding that his Daughter ranne forth with such a clamour, followed her immediatlie, fearing she would offer some violence on herselfe, and finding her deade, holding the Epitaphe in her hand, he was in great daunger to make a third in this wofull tragedie. Ah miserable & desolate wretch (quoth hee) if thy knowledge had efficacie in working the Duke of *Feris* death, why was it not sufficient to prevent thy Daughters mishappe? Unhappy was the houre when first I practised this deuillish sorcerie.

Many other sorrowful lamentations he made ouer y^e dead bodies, whom we may aptlie compare to the loyall Louers *Piramus* and *Thisbie*: but after ward hee erected a costlie Sepulchre of *Brasse*, and hauing embalmed them according to the auncient ceremonies of funerall pompe, hee intombed them in the Temple bothe together, and caused the Epitaphe to be cunningly grauen thereon. Not long after, considering himselfe depriued of his lawfull heyre, and howe greatly he had peruerterd the course of nature, very extreame greefe ended his daies: but ere he died, hee enclosed the Treasure of the Temple with such enchauntments, and with so strong and fearefull a guard, that from the time of his death, it was very dangerous to come nere the place. And tell the time of *Palmendos* arriuall there, there durst not anie one make tryall thereof, albeit befoze *Baledon* abused the *Islande*, knights of diuers Regions came to proue theyr fortune: and y^e Giant himselfe came thether for the same occasion, but seeing hee coulde not approche the Temple, perceiuing the *Island* to be faire and delectable: he got it by force of Armes, the people thereof beeing vnable to resist his hostilitie.

Let vs nowe remember where we left befoze, the arriuall of *Palmendos* in this *Islande* of *Delphos*, to whome one of the Parriners told all these thinges, as also the horrible villanies of the Giant: wherefoze he intreated him not to anker in that Pozte, because (quoth he) we shal all

The history of *Palmendos*.

bee either slayne or taken prysoners. *Why* : sayd *Palmendos*, is no man able to punish his pryde and tyrannie : seeing *Fortune* hath conducted me hether, and will permitte me but to haue a sight of him : I will not departe without some prooofe of my selfe. For if I bee Sonne to the Emperour *Palmerin*, I must not bee frighted with the name of *Gyants*, who rather resemble huge Colosses without anie soules, then humaine creatures : much lesse strange adventures, howe harde and dangerous soeuer they seeme. If I would acquire prayse and honour immortall, long time must I followe millitarie exercise, as my Father did in his yonger dayes, preuailling against diuers such Monsters, & bringing innumerable enterpryses to happy ende: turne proue then towarde *Shore*, and boldlie let vs enter the *Porte*, without anie feare of this disformed *Goliath*. With much ado they sette into the *Porte*, where they were no sooner entred, but they sawe themselves enclosed with the chayne, which sight dismayed bothe the *Maister* and *Harriners* : but *Palmendos* and *Ozario* presently put on theyr *Helmets* and *Gauntlets*, standing ready for defence of all the rest.

The *Gyant* beeing aduertised that a rich Ship was gotte within the chaine, commaunded his Sonne presently to take Armes, and with sufficient assistants to goe take all the Strangers prysoners : wherto the young Tyrant was very readie, and entring with thre Knights into a boate, came directly to the Shippe, where *Palmendos* standing foremost, the *Gyants* Sonne thus spake to him. Howe darest thou Knight be so bold, as to enter our *Porte* without licence : I dare do more then that, answered *Palmendos*, in despite of such disloyall villaines as you are, who by trecherous meanes intrap the innocent, and afterward exercise what crueltie you please vppon them : but now is the time come, I hope, that shal querdon you with recompence aunswerable to such brutish behaviour. The *Gyants* Sonne dyspleased with these wordes, sought with
his

The history of *Palmendos*. 24

his knights to enter violently the ship: but Palmendos and Ozalio being to high above them, gaue them so many sharpe repulses, as young Baledon receiued his deathes wounde at the Princes hande, and Ozalio sent one of the knights to beare him companie. With this foyle & boate speedilie returned, and they aduertised Baledon what had happened, bringing his Sonne slaine vp into his Chamber, wherewith he was so wōderfully enraged: as he vowed to buy his bloode with the death of all the strangers. In bitter anguish of hart, he called for his Armour, preparing himselfe to the dismall attempt: in meane while the two knights that escaped backe aliuē, stood on the shore reuiling the Prince, wylling him to prepare, for his death was comming.

If your Maister (quoth Palmendos) bee so valiant as you repozte, let him deale alone with mee in single syght, and if I chaunce to vanquishē him, let him accomplishe what I shall sette downe, and I will graunt him life. On the contrary, if hee conquer mee, let him doe with mee and mine as him pleaseth: tell him, these brauadoes & proude speeches cannot daunt resolute mindes, and if hee dare graunt me safe conduct, with good assuraunce not to offer mee anie wrong, I will presentlie come on shore and try my fortune with him.

The history of *Palmendos*.

CHAP. VII.

Howe Palmendos came on lande to combat with the Gyant Baledon, whom he vanquished, and afterwarde deliuered many Knights out of his prysons, among whom were two young Princes, beeing Moores: who in tra- uailing to the Emperours Courte, were by a tempest cast on this Islande.



Right soone went the *Knights* to the *Gyant* with *Palmendos* challenge, who beeing very wel pleased therewith, came downe proude- lie to y^e *Port* with these speeches. Which is the wret- ched *Knicht*, that dare so per- emptorie venture on shoze, to receiue the death he hath iustly deserved: I am the man, an- swered *Palmendos*, and I will be so good as my worde, if thou wilt faithfully promise mee safetie from thy people. By the hallowed fayth, sayde *Baledon* that I owe to our *Gods*, thou shalt be as secure as thou canst require, albeit I die vnder thy *Swoorde* in *Combat*. The *Prince* lothe to waste the time in wordes, called for a *Shiffe* to carrie him on shoze, which the *Harriners* vnwillingly consented to, beeing loth to loose a *Knicht* so valiant. In breefe, he came on lande, and no one with him but his *Cozin Ozalio*, who woulde not at anie time forsake his companie. *Baledon* praunceth vppe to the plaine before his *Castell*, comman- ding his attendants on paine of their liues, not any waie to trouble or molest his enemye. Now are the *Champions* couered with their *Swords* and *Sheldes*, and with such furie doe the weapons clanche vpon y^e *Armour*, as though
Vulcan

The history of *Palmendos*. 25

Vulcan and his Cyclops were at worke with their hammers. You must thinke that the Gyant, being a man of monstrous stature, dealing with a young Prince, but a gyttle (in a manner) in cōparison of him, did often bring his life to very perrillous exigents: notwithstanding, so did the heauens fauour Palmendos, and despise the manifold tyrannies of the Gyant, as after a long, cruell & bloodie fight, Baledon had receiued so many woundes, as hee was constrained to fall at the Princes mercie: for which Palmendos humblye thanking heauen, boldlye sette hys foote vpon the Gyant, saying. Confesse thy selfe (Baledon) vanquished by me, and let mee cōuey the prysoners which thou vniustlye detainest in thy Castell, for the remainder of thy life hangeth on the point of my sword.

When the Gyant behelde his great pompe so overthrowne, and hee had no meane now left wherewith to defende himselfe: he breathed forth these sorrowfull speeches. Ah angry Gods, howe strange and diuers are your iudgments, in suffering bothe mee and my Sonne to bee foyled by one knight? How see I well, that myne infinite and wicked offences, committed against men without desert, hath throwne this weakefull sentence on me. Then calling his seruants, hee commaunded them to conduct the Prince into the Castell, and to deliuer all his prysoners to him, with any thing els hee shoulde commaunde them.

So went the Prince with his Cousin Ozalio and two of the Gyants seruants to the Castell, the rest remained to bring theyr Maisters deade bodie, and when they were entred the bale Courte, they met the Gyantesse heauilye lamenting, and cursing the knight who was cause thereof. But Palmendos made no account of her wordes, commaunding all the prysoners to bee presently brought before him, which in sooth were very many, both knights, Merchants and other trauayling strangers, who had long time beene kept there in captiuitie: and now seeing

The history of *Palmendos*.

they were so generallie called, they verilie thought to die, or endure some cruell torment, but finding the contrarie, I leaue their ioy to the Readers iudgment. Then *Palmendos* called for the Knights Armour, that eache one knowing his owne Armour might bee armed therewith: for this their happie deliuerance, they all fell downe at the Princes feete, desiring God to reward his honourable paynes.

But among the prisoners, there were two young Knights of comelie stature, being both Moores, who had not long time bene held in that seruitude, and witnessing by their countenaunces that they were descended of royal parentage. The one of them was *Rifarano*, Son to *Trineus* Emperour of *Allemaigne*, and *Aurecinda* the Soldans Sister, as you may reade in the *History* of *Palmerin d'Oliua*: the other was named *Lecefin*, Son to the Soldane of *Persia*: being the youngest of three which he had by the Princesse *Zephira*. These two young Lords were nourished together by the Soldane, because he behelde the forward inclination of *Rifarano*, whom he euer imagined would prooue a worthe Knight: and for he was Sonne to his Sister and the Emperour *Trineus* his great frænde, he looued him as *Lecefin* his owne Childe. *Rifarano* coming to the age of tenne or twelue yeres, wered very forward in all commendable exercises, and one day reasoning with his Mother: desired her to tell him the cause, why she went so continually clad in mourning, the truth whereof she discoursed to him, and how his Father was the Emperour *Trineus* of *Allemaigne*. When *Rifarano* vnderstode, that he was Sonne to one of the cheefest Princes in *Christendome*, hee made greater account of himselfe then he did befoze, and dysposed himselfe to matters of higher quallitie, so that being of yeres to receiue his Knight-hood, he requested the Soldane to honour him therewith: which he with right good will perfozmed, causing *Joustes* and *Tournaments* to sollemnize that time withall, where
in

The history of *Palmendos*. 26

in Rifarano still bare awaie the pryze. Following Armes and Chivalrie he still continued, and with good successe wonne such fame throught all *Persia*, as y^e Soldane thought to ioyne him in marriage with the King Maulerinos eldest Daughter. But he would neuer harken to such matters, for that hee had secretlie bowed, first to see the Emperour his Father, whereto his Mother (whose dayes long sickness had new shortened) enermore prouoked him: that Trineus beholding the fruite of her loue, might thinke the better of his acquaintaunce with her.

After the obsequies and royall funerall, as wel becomed a Princesse of so great regarde, and Rifarano lothe to stay, his Mother beeing dead: hee desired y^e Soldane that he might trauaile to *Constantinople*, to see the Courte of the Emperour Palmerin, and thence he would goe to his Father in *Allemagne*. Albeit very vnwilling, yet y^e Soldane condescended, whereto the young Prince Lecefin, who loued Rifarano as himselfe, beganne to conceiue great sorowe: wherfore he intreated his Father that hee might trauaile with him in companie, perswading him that it would be a cause of his Cousins more speedie returne. The Soldane liked heereof very well, and although he was yet verie young, he gaue him his knighthoode: and so with diuers presents from his Father & Zephira, as also Letters to both the Emperours, accompanied with thirtie hardie knights they tooke shyping, and by meanes of an exceeding rough tempest on the Sea, they were driuen perforce into this Ile of *Delphos*, where being hemde in with the chayne, and flattered by the Gyant to come on shore, without suspecting anie treason they went to his Castell, and finding outward freendlie entertainment, they were fetched forth of their beddes and thrust into pryson, & twentie of the knights that came with them cruelly murdered, the rest were brought into the Dungeon to their Masters, and afterward the Gyant tooke the spoyle of y^e Ship at his pleasure.

C. 2.

But

The history of *Palmendos*.

But to come to our purpose, Rifarano and Lecefin seeing themselves deliuered from this dellozous life, much worse then that of the slaves in the Gallies, they spake to *Palmēdos* in this maner. *Tel vs in courtesie, good Knight, by what meanes haue you obtained our libertie: for wee meruaile that we see not the Gyant, who brought vs hether by villanie & treason.* Gentlemen, (quoth the Prince) *I am a Knight borne farre hence, and being by the angrie Seas cast vpon this Island, I determined to come on shore, where being no waie able to escape the death present before mine eyes, I was constrained to Combat with the Gyant you talke of, who to allure me the sooner to the battaile, promised me securitie from any saue himself. But heauen giuing me strength, to erect a mortall Trophe of his slaughtered bodie, hath thereby giuen you all freedome againe.*

Might we not, saide Rifarano, knowe your name, to whom wee are so much indebted for our deliuerance: as for vs, it is necessarie you should knowe of whence & what we are, that if we should growe heereafter ingratefull for this kindnes, the meanest in the worlde might iustlie condemne vs. This young Prince, (quoth hee) is named *Lecefin*, Sonne to the noble Soldane of *Persia*, and I his vnworthie Nephew, issued from *Trineus* Emperour of *Allemagne*, brother by marriage to the incomparable Prince *Palmerin d'Oliva*: heere to hee added the whole discourse of their trouble, which you haue heard already. In happie time came I hether, answered *Palmendos*, to succour so good and noble Knights as you are, cheefelie for your neere alliaunce to the Emperour *Palmerin*, whom I continuallie desire to serue, and shortly shall present my selfe vnto him: but first (by the fauour of Fortune,) I woulde haue his eares so acquainted with some actions of account, as might moue his spirite with the more affection to see me. And seeing you goe so soone to his Courte, let me intreate this fauour at your handes, as to conduct this company with

The history of *Palmendos*. 27

with you which I haue deliuered from prison, and present his Maistie with them from me, as also the wife & daughter of Baledon the Gyant: for it is both iust & reasonable, to dispossesse this Island of such bad people, as haue wyth such horrible tyrannies so long time abused the same. For I dare say, the people y^e inhabite this Isle, wil moze gladly submit themselves to y^e Emperors regiment, then be held in slaerie by such helhoundes. In meane while, wee wyll leaue some good Knight of this soyle as gouernour thereof in his highnes name, vntil he haue disposed thereof as shal seeme best in his wisdom. Willingly wold I make p^roofe before your departure, of a strange aduenture couched in the Temple: that if I die in y^e attempt, you may reuenge my death, & happilie liue to finish the same. Rifarano and Lecchin made answer, that they would fulfil any thing he pleased to commaunde them, for which Palmendos requited them with many thanks.

CHAP. VIII.

How Palmendos placed in the gouernment of the Isle of Delphos, an auncient wyse Knight named Guilador, by whom he vnderstood the daunger and difficultie of the aduenture in the Temple, whether (notwithstanding) he afterward trauailed: & how he fortunatly ended the same.



After all the Knights & Gentlemen had Armed themselves, Palmendos caused the Gyantesse and her daughter, to be fastened with a strong chaine to a pillar, least they shoulde offer some violence on themselves, and the chayne in the Port he commanded to be taken away, with all
 C. 3. other

The history of *Palmendos*.

other daungers that might hurt trauaillers : then summoning the people of the Island, he thus beganne to conferre with them.

My Bretheren and Freendes, I cannot thinke but you all reioyce, to see your selues deliuered from the miserable seruitude, wherein the Tyrant Baledon hath long time held you, henceforth therefore I intend, that you shall acknowledge for your liege Lord and Soueraigne, the famous & vertuous Emperour Palmerin d'Oliva, to whome I will make present of this Island, which the God of heauen hath suffered me to conquire : for you knowe that the Tyrant is slaine, his Wife and Daughter likewise remain my prisoners, and to his Maiesty wil I shortly send them. Let me therfore intreate ye, to continue his true and loyal Subjects, and I shall so behaue my selfe with his highnes, as he shall henceforth defend this Island and you: for the gouernment whereof in meane while, I wil leaue one that shall bee chosen among you, who shall swcare to resign his office, to him whom the Emperour shall please to send hether.

The Knights & Gentlemen of the Island were greatly contented, hearing Palmendos vse such gracious speeches, acknowledging themselues happy to remaine y^e Emperours vassalles : whereupon they sware fidelity to him, and elected a reuerende Knight of the Island named Guilador, to whom the authoritie of Deputie was committed, and then they caused the Tyrants bodie to bee burned, for the horrible villanies he had done in his life time, to which execution all the people of the Island resorted, not so much for the sight thereof, as to honour the Patrone of their deliuerance. Euery thing thus wisely and discretely pacified, he determined to try the aduventure of y^e Temple, whereupon the newe Gouernour desired him, not to hazard himselfe in a matter so perrillous, for that manie Knights had lost their liues in the attempt : which made Palmendos far more desirous, to know wherein y^e greatest danger

The history of *Palmendos*. 28

danger thereof consisted, at whose request, Guillador thus beganne the discourse. Know my Lord, that the Temple wherein our Priestes great Treasure is hidde, is a place now ouergrowne as a thicket of young Trees, by reason of the long time since anie one durst approche the same, and in that Woodde is a sauage wilde Beeste, of moze cruell nature certaine, then that which Hercules slew on the Mountaine *Erymanthus* in *Arcadia*. And when anie one dooth offer to enter the Temple, he cometh forth of his denne, and makes him sure for euer returning againe. In sooth, quoth the Prince, these newes are very terrible in hearing, yet neuer was there any aduventure in the world so difficult, but one or other hath accomplished it, and I trusting onelie in the helpe of God, will try if this enchauntment were ordained perpetuall, not fearing all þe Beestes or Devils in the world.

I am sure my Lord, quoth Rifarano, that if you finish not this enchauntment, it will neuer be accomplished by anie other: therefore boldly sette vpon it, for gladly would I endure part of the paine, and by þe faith of a true Knight, I shall assist ye with my vttermost endeouour. No other helpe doo I desire, answered Palmendos, then the fauour of the Gods onelie, and I hope they will not be farre from me, if so I stand in need thereof: notwithstanding, I humbly thanke yee for your good will, and if I happen to faile in mine enterpryse, you shall make no better witnesse of your wordes, then courtously to hazard the aduventure, to recover the honour lost by me: for which cause, as also to beguile the tediousnes of trauaile, you shal accompany me to the Temple. So wylling the Merchants & other prisoners to stay in the Castell, Palmendos, Ozalio, Rifarano, Lecefin and the rest of the Knights, beeing all wel armed, sette toward the Temple, many of the Islande trauailing with them, to guide them the way and doo other needefull seruices. Now had Palmendos caused to be made by meruailous subtil cunning, a coate of Armes, composed of

C. 4. ware,

The history of *Palmendos*.

ware and other like clammie myrtures, wherewith he covered all his Armour, that the sharpe byssles and tuskes of the Boze might haue no power to hurt him: and in this sorte they rode on together. Wéeing at length come to a conuenient place, which was within sight of the Temple, he beheld þe brutish thorne plaine, which made him doubt how he should gette thether with his Horse. Yet resolute for all channes, he takes an yron Pace, þe he had brought from the Gyants Castell, & forward goes to the Temple: desiring all his companions, that not one of them shoulde follow him: wherewith Ozaho and Ritarano were somewhat offended, yet lothe to breake his commaundement, they stayed, vsing hartie and zealous inuocations for hys good successe.

Palmendos making way with his Pace through the enchanted bypers, espyed a knight before him, who presently wounded a mightie Horne, at the sounde whereof the onglie and monstrous Boze came forth of his Denne, and ranne before the Temple Gate: there staying for Palmendos with such horrible grynning of his tuskes, as the very sight thereof was sufficient to fray a manne of good courage. By this time the Prince gained a conuenient place by the Temple side, when beholding the cruel beast come running fiercely towarde him, he commended himselfe to the heauens, and fell to his worke. So thicke as hayle flew the enchanted byssles from the Boze at the Prince, but the coate of ware so cōfounded their strength, as they could not pierce his Armour, which onely had ben the death of many knights before: But the Prince gaue the Beaste such a sounde stroke with his Pace on þe head, as he staggered to and fro vnable to sustaine himselfe, and following this good aduantage, thrust his sword so deepe downe his throate, as casting forth a great deale of bloode vpon the Prince, at length he tumbled downe on his side, when halfe a dozen good strokes with the Pace, made him safe for stirring any more. And although thys was a naturall

The history of *Palmendos*. 29

naturall Boze, yet had hee bene deuillishlie enchanted, and brought into that place by the Priestes Pagique, as the Lyons were y^e kild the Duke of *Feria*, this Boze was appointed by him to garde his Treasure in the Temple, which (as you heare) was slaine by the hande of *Palmendos*. And euen as the Boze of *Calydonia*, that was sent to torment the whole Countrey, died by the valour of *Meleager*, who afterward made a present of his head to y^e sayre *Atalanta*, as a notable experience of his magnanimitis, in like sort did the Prince of *Tharsus*, as a remembrance to all that should come thether, cut of the Bozes head, and as a signe of his spoyle and Trophe, set it on a Pyllar in the same place where he got the victorie. He had no sooner put off his coate of ware, which was well laden with y^e Bozes byssles: but he sawe the Knight of the Horne come towards him with a huge Mace in his hand, saying. Unhappy was thy coming (Knight) into this Desert, when thou must buy thy boldnes with thy dearest bloode. Where- with he gaue the Prince such a cruell blowe, as made him sette one knee to the ground, and so long endured the sharp fight betwene them: as they bothe being farre spent and ouerlaboured, fell downe to the ground not able to styre themselves.

Palmendos in short time recouering strength arose, and seeing his enemy was not to be founde: boldly went to enter the Temple, the Gates whereof stood now wide open, which greatlie augmented his desire to enter. Being come within the Bozche, two Images of Brasse stood on eyther side, who with monstrous Trumpets blew such forcible wind on him, as hee was thre or foure times carried forth againe therewith: but pressing on still with all the strength hee had, he gotte such sure footing within the Temple, as he felt no more of that violent winde. Passing forward in the bodie of the Church, he came to the magnificent Sepulchre, wherein the Duke of *Feria* and the high Priestes Daughter were interred, which was so riche,

P. 1.

sumptu.

The history of *Palmendos*.

sumptuous and rarelie inuented, as he had neuer seene the like befoze. Hauing read the Epitaph, he espied y^e Sword, wherewith the most perfect Damosell in looue set we herselfe, then mounting on the bars that inuironed y^e Tombe, he tooke the Sworde in his hand, and in remembzaunce of the accident, as also for the beautie thereof, hee hunge it at his girdle, determining to take it with him, and so walked higher to find out the Treasure. At length he came to the Sanduarie, where stood the auncient costlie Altare for the Sacrifice, hauing thereon an Idoll of massie Gold, vpon the head whercof was a rich imperiall Crowne, and in his right hand a Scepter so curiously framed, as it was impossible to see Jewels of greater price. In the Idolles other hand was a Booke, fast sealed with foure great buckles of Gold, and in such a meruailously costly Chaire was the Image sette: as nature her selfe would haue bene driven into admiration, to behold a matter of such surpassing excellencie. All about the Altare stood many Vasons of Golde, and befoze it hung diuers Images of siluer with lighted Lampes, from whence came such a sweete smell of Myrrhe and other Aromaticke Drugges, and the light caused the precious Stones in the Idoll so to glister, as it wold haue ranished anie eye to note the Haicke thereof. Palmendos carried away with contemplating this sight, and not able to withdraue his eyes from gazing thereon: at length beheld the darke night to draw on, the Lampes in this holie conclaue hauing so beguiled him, wherfoze hee concluded not to depart thence till the morning, that hee might behold the other singularities of the place.

CHAP.

The history of *Palmendos.* 30

CHAP. IX,

What illusions appeared to Palmendos in the Temple, one whereof resembled the beautie of Francelina, wherewith he had a great deale of talke: and how Ozalio with the other Knights came and found him.



Palmendos sate downe on a curious piller, intending to repose himselfe till the next morning; but immediatlie he hearde such a bzuite and rumour, as though the whole worlde had beene in one moment assembled. Hereupon he arose, and couragiously drawing his sword (because hee doubted some ambushe or newe charge) went directly to the Sepulchre of y^e Duke, where hee behelde a Damosell with her hayre about her eares, and all her garments soyled with blood, which verie sight greened him to the hart. This was the shadow and representation of the Priestes Daughter, who after shee had deliuered manie bitter sighes, with a voice hollow and trembling thus spake.

Am I not more wretched and vnfortunate, then anie other vnder the Globe of heauen? yes questionlesse, seeing the fatall Destinies hath appointed me, to endure perpetuall, cruell and rigorous martirdomes, for thy sake noble Duke of *Feria*, the onely recozde of mine afflicted soule, for whom loue tooke such priuiledge on me, as I feared not to offend my selfe with mine owne hande. But who hath robbed me of thy sword, that so suddainly made the sad execution of my life? Ah Palmendos, thinke not to carry it away so lightlie, for that sword is yet more necessary for

me,

me,

The history of *Palmendos*.

me. With these wordes she ranne violentlie vpon him, and shooke him as if she would haue tozned him in peeces: at which instant there arose such a thunder and trembling of the earth, as hee thought verilie the Temple would haue suncke, and the foure elements resolve and turne in their former state of Chaos. By reason heereof, the Prince coulde not continue his magnanimous and wanted vigour, but fell downe depzved of his vnderstanding, as though pale death had taken possession of him. During this traunce, a faire Virgin richlie accoustred, (whom the olde Woman that told him of so manie thinges at *Tharsus*, had sent thether by her poste) came and tooke him by y hand, saying.

Arise *Palmendos*, my noble Lozde, and come to her, who seeing the fearefull state wherein you are, onely by fantasies represented to your eyes: doo intreate you not to disable your heroycall and noble courage, at the sight of vaine and fantasticall visions, for it becometh not so good and accomplished Knights, as you are, in such sort to passe thozow strange aduentures. Be of good cheere then, and repate this houre of your renowne, to surpasse all the bravest men in the worlde: because since the essence of thys enchauntment, no Knight coulde enter this Temple but you alone. Wherefoze by good reason ought the treasure to be yours, which hath so long time bene concealed here: take hence then the Golden Idoll on the Altare, with all the other rich and precious Jewels, and send them to the vertuous Emperour your Father. And for your sake shall this Temple heerafter be frequent and accessible for any, which you shall consecrate to the name of Christ, and of the Treasure you shall yet finde, you shall erect a Monasterie of Virgins, in honoz of that incontaminate mayden, that brought the Saviour of all man kind into the worlde, who hath giuen you strength to runne thozowe these actions: that this place may bee reverently & devoutly vled, which heertofore hath ben blasphemed with Idolatrie, contrarie to

The history of *Palmendos*. 31

to the bountie inexhaustible, making to sinful men bowes, offerings and sacrifices. And albeit you are not as yet a Christian, yet for my sake enter that vnspotted faith, for the time will come, when you shall sundry times say, happy was that house wherein you found me. Having taken good order for all that I haue said, contayne your selfe no longer in these Countries, because in other clymats is reserved a triumphall Scepter for you, enriched with honoz and eternall praises.

In baine it were to aske, if *Palmendos* was filled with great meruaile, hearing the *Damosels* voyce, who came to comfort him in this austere calamitie, and could so well discipher his affayres, for the extasie & ranshment of his spirite, which evidently appeared in his countenance, delivered ample testimonie thereof. For were these words anie thing els, but fuel to encrease lones fire already burning: neuerthelcs, seeing himselfe in a place so commodious, where frelie hee might holde chat with this *Damosell*, he called vp his spirits, and boldly made this answer. *Madame*, for the reuerend honour you beare to your God, conceale not who you are that knowe mee so well, intreating ye to pardon my presumptuous request, because your rare and perfect beautie, which is the onely spurre to my demaund, hath confounded mee with greater admiration, then all the strange sightes I haue yet beheld: all which, (in respect of your excellence) I holde as diabolicall & frivolous, for you seeme celestially, and sent by the Gods into these nether Regions, where hauing discovered the future euent of my Destinies, my hart hath thereby receiued incredible ioy and contentment. Bee not abashed courteous Knight, quoth she, at any thing I haue said, for it is long since I knewe what I haue vttered, and in regard of your worthy valour, I loue and esteeme yee aboue all other in the world, so that I haue left the Countries of my originall, onely to see and tell yee what I haue done: desiring you to excuse me in the rest, as concealing of whence and

The history of *Palmendos*.

What I am, because at this time you cannot be satisfied therewith, yet ere it be long we will meete againe, and then shall you vnderstande more of mee, by one request I must make to ye, which as yet may not be manifested. Wonderful will that consolation be (quoth the Prince, to me, that you will commaunde anie thing wherein I may expresse my forces, and in that deuotion I haue vowed, euermore faithfully to continue your freende: offering in witnes of this obeysaunce, to serue hencefoorth as your knight, with promise not to preiudice y^e least of your commaundements, so long as my starres giue mee leaue to breathe. For will I further presse ye to tell me what yee are, seeing your will standeth not thereto: but till y^e gracious houre of commaundement come, I will accomplysh your appointment, erecting heere a Monasterie of byrgins for the seruice of your God, and your wordes haue made me thirst with vnquenchable desire, till I bee resolved as concerning that sayth. While she returned him many thanks for his freendly offers, the old woman arrived, who made him enamoured with the loue of *Francelina* in his Realm: she taking the *Damosell* by the hand, said. Goe wyth mee faire Daughter, and leaue this most discourteous knight, who suffered me to be misused befoze him in *Tharsus*: wher of I hope to take sufficient reuenge, by the extream passions his hart shall endure heereafter.

So sooner had she ended these wordes, but immediatlie they bothe vanished away, wherewith the Prince greatly admiring: was driven into such a profounde conceit of her rare beantie, as he thought euen there to yelde vpp his ghost, because hee imagined neuer to haue seene her like. Heerein his iudgment was no whit beguiled, for he did as many young Louers doe, thewe themselves favourable Iudges in their own causes. Now enters he into conceit, because the olde woman had taken her away, that this *Damosell* was *Francelina*, she whom he had so liuelie imprinted in his hart, as for her loue he had left his native Countrey.

The history of *Palmendos*. 32

Countrey. Thus compassed with griefe on every side, hee entred into these termes. Alas olde Woman, I know not what thou maist be, yet very true do I find thy wordes: but small to my auaille did Ozalio smite thee in my presence, that I must requite with so long, p̄kelome and lingering penaunce. Ah cruell enemye, why didst thou robbe mine eyes so soone of their vnsp̄akeable content? thou sufferedst me to see, that my loue might growe the more immesurable: but thy wordes were such daggers to my hart, as neuer can I taste a sharper cozatiue. And if this were the obiect of Francelina, (for fayrer creature did the Sunne neuer shine vpon) at no time shall my soule enioy rest, till once more I haue seene her againe. Thus enter-coursing a thousand opinions, he stood a long time as diuē to the Antipodes, accusing himselfe with base pusillanimitie, and blaming the olde woman, who had so robbed him of his forces, as he could not stay the Lady with him, by whose presence and gracious speeches he supposed himselfe in an eternall beatitude.

But now is the clowdie night chased toward the Occident, when hee determined to effect what the Damosell had commaunded him, and going to the Altare, hee tooke the golden Balons and the other sumptuous thinges, making them readie to be caried thence, disposing likewise the Idoll of the Crowne, Scepter and Booke. But as hee would haue lifted the Image forth of the Chayre, he found it so heauie as he was not able to stirre it: wherewith he being offended, said. And I shall to thee more honoꝝ then thou hast yet receiued of me: so lifting vppe his Face, he made it fall in peeces to the ground. From out the bodie of the Image, flew a very strange Wynde all blacke, giuing such fearefull whyskes and cryes, as the Prince was thereat amazed: and following her out of the Temple, he beheld a great many more such like Birds with her, they flying altogether with that noyse, the same way where Ozalio and the Knights attended, wherewith they likewise

The history of *Palmendos*.

meruailing, were certified by the men of the *Ilande*, that this prodigie signified *Palmendos* entrance into the *Temple*: for they had heard before, by sundry learned *Magicians*, that these were certaine infernall spirits, which should be chased forth of the Countrey. When the aduerture of the *Temple* was finished. *Rifarano*, *Ozario*, & all the *Knights* glad of these newes, went where they beheld the monstrous wilde *Beast*, and thence to the *Temple*, where *Ozario* first found *Prince* opening a great chest, which contained the *Priests* principall *Treasure*, consisting of such rare and inestimable *Jewelles*, as (it was thought) the like was neuer scene before. *Palmendos* beholding his friend *Ozario*, ranne and embraced him meruailous kindly, the like did hee to *Rifarano*, *Lecefin* and the rest, all of them extolling the happy starre that guided the *Prince*: and he acquainted them with all things since his departure from them, sauing his conference with the *Damocel*, because none of them should suspect his loone. The intreated he *Guillador* to send for some skilful man, who might undertake to deuise and build the *Monastery*: in short time the greater part of the *Clergie* was sent for, and among them to a vertuous man of special knowledge, he gaue the charge and superintendauce of the worke, as also boundfull stores of *Gold* and *Siluer*, which was taken out of the *Priests* welthy Chest. All things hee committed to the trust of *Guillador*, that the *Temple*, *Monasterie* and waies thereto, should be doone in decent order: but he whose hart was onelie dedicated to the *Ladies* beautie, which appeared vnto him vnder forme of a bodilie illusion, tooke small delight in any thing els, but in her gracious and diuine remembraunce. Now did he hasten the daie of his departure, desiring *Rifarano* & *Lecefin* to make speede to the *Emperour*, and present the *Pyantesse*, her Daughter and the other prisoners to him, as also all the *Treasure* was found in the *Temple*, from a strange Gentleman religiously bowed to his seruice: who in respect of
great

The history of *Palmendos*. 33

great affaires that called him els where, coulde not come to kisse his Maiesties hand, which he wil do with all speed possible. Rifarano and Lecefin were lothe to leaue Palmendos, but seeing it must needes bee so, they soone after conuained the Gyantesse and her Daughter on shipboard, they making great mone to bee carried from the Island. In the same Shippe was the Crowne, Scepter, Image, Basins and all the other Treasure carryed, and in an other Ship, the prisoners found in the Castell on y^e promontorie, with all things els expedient for the voyage: then Rifarano and Lecefin taking their leaue of Palmendos & Ozalio, went on board where the Gyantesse & the Treasure was, commaunding their Ankers to be weyed and theyr sailes hoysed, the winde then seruing fitte and favourable, and so are they sayling toward *Constantinople*. As yet abode Palmendos in the Isle of *Delphos*, to see what Guilladors workmen would compasse, in so great a worke as he had giuen them charge of.

CHAP. X.

Howe Rifarano and Lecefin (with all theyr trayne arriued in Constantinople, where they were honourable receiued by the Emperour and them of the Court, greatly meruayling at the newes hee hearde of Palmendos, and what afterward followed.



At what time Rifarano and Lecefin should arriue at *Constantinople*, there were assembled manie great Lordes and Barons, in honour of a sollemne feaste, which the Emperour made for the marriage of the *Hungarian* Prince, Dirreus sonne to King Fryssoll, and twinne Brother to

J. 1.

Belcar,

The history of *Palinendos*.

Belcar. Dytreus so soone as he was armed Knight, went to the Emperours Court where hee was woozthilie welcomed, and albeit he was his Pauesies Nephew, yet he loued him with a particuler affection, his courtteous and ciuill maners, ioynd with his forwardnes in Armes, gaue hope that he would proue a valiant Knight hereafter. Hee had not bene long in the Emperours Court and thow he acquainted with euery one, but hee grewe enamoured with the beantie of Esquiuela, Daughter to the Soldane of *Babylon & Alchidiana*, so that being one day in y^e Chamber of his Cozine Philocrista, eldest Daughter to the Emperour, deuising with her and her Sister Melicia: hee got such apt time and occasion, as hee made his intent knowne to Esquiuela, she modestlie answering him, that if he saith, fully meant to make her his wife, shee woulde settle her choise vpon him onelie. Dytreus who was thereon resolved, desired the Emperour and Emperesse to graunt that marriage, they being willing to gratifie the Nephew, as also to preferre the young Princeesse: with the consent of King Frysol, affianced them together, and Dytreus fearing the marriage would be deferred too long, solicited the Emperour in such sort, as hee sent with all speede to make the same known to the Soldane. In meane while, his Pauesie summoned the cheefest Lords of the Empire, to prepare a Tryumphe in honour of this Feast, so the accomplishment whereof nothing wanted, saue onely the Embassadors returne that went to the Soldane.

But nowe are Rifarano and Lecefin entred y^e Hauens of *Constantinople*, intending to lande befoze the Emperour should knowe any thing of them, because they came not in such equipage as happilie he woulde expect. Being then all Armed, except with their Helmes, they rode through the Cittie but with two Squires onelie that bare the Lances and Helmes, they being wonderfullie noted of euerie one, and reputed for some strange Lordes of great birth, and in this sort they came to the Pallace, wher very boldlie

The history of *Palmendos*. 34

boldlie they woulde haue entred : but the Guard stayed them, to vnderstand the cause of their comming. We are, quoth they, two knights of Countreyes far hence distant, and hether wee come to see and serue the Emperour *Palmerein*. You must then leaue these offensive Armes, answered the Guard, if you meane to goe where his highnes is : or els declare your proper names to vs, that wee may goe see if it be his pleasure you shall come in this sorte before him. Our Armes we will not leaue, said *Rifarano*, because it ill becomes an honest knight to do so : but you may goe certifie his Maiestie, that heere is *Lecefin* Sonne to the Soldane of *Persia* & the Princesse *Zephira*, in whose companie is *Rifarano*, Sonne to the Emperour *Trineus* of *Allemagne*, who humbly desire to kisse his highnes hand. His Maiestie had no sooner notice of their names, but (in exceeding contentation) he sent his Sonne *Primaleon* with diuers other knights, to entertaine the as becomed : and the more Princes seeing every one giue place to him that came foremost, immediatlie they reputed him to be the Emperours Sonne, whereupon they allighted, when *Primaleon* courteously embracing them, said.

My Lordes, you are more then welcome to my Fathers Court, his Maiestie being not a little glad of your arriual : so taking each of them by the hand, he conducted them into the great Hall, where the Emperour sat in his Chaire attending their comming, and they approaching the State, made offer to kisse his highnes hande, but hee tooke them in his armes & would not suffer them, saying. Know my good Cousins, that I account my selfe greatly indebted to you, in that you woulde forsake your owne Countreyes to visite me so farre off, and that I may not faile in the vse of your names, let me vnderstand w of you is *Rifarano*, albeit you bothe stande equall in my grace and fauour : yet being singularlie desirous to continue my loue to the Princesse *Zephira*, I must consequently esteeme and affecte all that come from her. On the other side, as well for the

The history of *Palmendos*.

indissoluble amitie, intirelie grounded in our young yeres betwene the Emperour Trineus and me, as also in regard of the alliance united betweene vs: I am constrained to loue his linage and posteritie, and thus I would haue you bothe perswaded, that greater good coulde not happen to me, then the sight of them I esteeme so dearelie. Heauen so prosper and fauour you in all things, as they haue thow- he comforted my spirits, by the very hearing of my good freendes & confederates the Soldane and Zephira, whose health I pray ye resoluue me of, for it is long since I hearde any thing from them.

My Lord, answered Rifarano, at what time we departed *Persia*, we left their personnes in most safe disposition, and they by vs (humbly kissing your Maiesties hand) haue sent this Letter in signe of the reuerence and looue they beare ye: now for they could not themselves come so far, they haue sent this Prince their Sonne, named Lecefin, in their steepe to do anie seruiceable ductie in your royall Court. As for my selfe, I am Rifarano, Sonne to Aurecin- da, expressly leauing my Countrey to haue knowledge of your excellencie, and with my vttermost endeuours to fol- low your seruice: craving this licence, that I may goe see the Emperour Tryneus my Father, whose Sonne I ac- count my selfe not onelie happie to be, but greatlie accuse my selfe of ingratitude, that I haue so long time deferred this voyage. Lecefin kissing the Letter, vpon his knee de- liuered it to the Emperour: which he commaunding to be opened, toke and read as followeth.

The



*The Letter of Zephira, wife
to the Soldane of Persia, to the Emperour
Palmerin.*

To the right happy and most fortunate Prince, *Palmerin d'Oliva*, mirrour of courtesie, and surpassing all good Knights: *Zephira* wife to the Soldane of *Persia*, perpetuall vowed freende to your imperiall Maiestie, kisseth your highnes hand, wyshing your increase in all felicitie.

Nowe (most noble Emperour) that the long and belement affection of my *Donne* *Lecefin* to see *Constantinople*, onely to offer you his service, and beholde the magnificence of your Court: hath caused the Soldane my husband and me, nowe to sende him in company of *Rifarano*, *Donne* to the Emperour *Trineus*, to satisfie the desire they had, in visiting you on our behalfe. And albeit they deserued greater royaltie for such a voyage, yet woulde they no other companie then thirtie Knights; knowing that ostentation in shewe, woulde not purchase them the more estimation at your handes, and therfore they come no other wise accoustred. Notwithstanding, if the sincere amitie you euermore shewed mee, hath acquainted you with the inwarde integritie of my harte, whereby you haue deigned me place among your most affectionate freendes: I desire you in regard of that zeale, to entertaine these two, & accept of this present, as coming from the hand of her, who hath not her equall in good will

3. 3.

The history of *Palmendos*.

will to your excellencie . And to witnes my bounden due,
tie in acceptation heereof, I bowe both me and mine euer,
more to your obeylaunce : perswading my selfe, that your
wonted debonnaire courtesie, will not suffer me disdained
in the offer I make.

The most obedient of your freendes,
Zephira, Soldanesse of Persia.

For this gentle Letter from the Soldane and Zephira, the Emperour gaue Lecchin their Son manie thanks, againe and againe welcomming him to the Courte, then turning to Rifarano, he said. I well perceiue my Lord Rifarano, that you are the vndoubted Sonne of the Emperour Trineus, because you so liuelie resemble him in face, well haue ye done to come see so good a father, and the more doe I thank God for your arriuall heere, at this time when we intend to holde open Court, to honour the approaching mariage of our beloued Cozin : and so please ye to stay the intended Tryumphes, heere shall ye see good store of woorthie knightes, that meane to tempt fortune for the Garland of honour.

These newes dread Lozde, answered Rifarano, are not a little welcome to vs, in respect that next the principall point of our voyage, which was to kisse your Maiesties hande : wee were desirous to beholde the valour of your knightes, for their renowne is spredde throught the whole worlde, and now we shall wel witnes the same, comming at a time so apt for the purpose. For can we forget a woorthie knight whom we met in our iourney, beeing named Palmendos, without his seconde or match in martiall affaires, and I thinke there is no one manne liuing, except your highnes, the mirrour and Paragon of Chivalrie, that woorthie may be equalled with him: right sozrie are we, because wee can deliuer no better knowledge of the man,
by

The history of *Palmendos*. 36

by reason of his desire to passe unknowne, and therefore concealeth himselfe in al places where he trauaileth. This famous man (right noble Lord) humbly kisseth your highnes hand, hauing sent yee such rare & inestimable riches, as when you haue seene them, you will iudge that the like present was neuer given to anie King or Emperour, as we are to present you withal from this unknown Knight. The charge of this message we undertooke, in y^e our selues with diuers other Knights, were deliuered from the cruell bondage of Baledon, the Tyrant in the Isle of *Delphos*, where we endured miseries not fit to be recounted in this gracious assemblie. Yet y^e heauens gaue *Palmendos* power to kill this Tyrant, after which victorie hee hath seized the Island subiect to your Maiestie, untill you sende some such Gouvernour or Lieutenaunt as best liketh you: where withall, as testimonie of his honourable victorie, hee hath sent y^e the Wife and Daughter to the Tyrant, to dispose of them as shall seeme best in your wisdom: heere to he added the whole discourse of the Temple, & howe *Palmendos* had ended the enchanted aduenture therof. Without doubt, (for the Emperour, being driuen into great meruaile) I cannot imagine who this worthy Knight shoulde be, for if he haue ended such a waightie enterpryse, it must needs follow that he is peerlesse in Chivalrie: and if it be his fortune to see our Court, I shall requite him withall the honour I can: but tell me, is he a Moore or a Christian?

A Moore borne as I thinke, answered *Rifarano*, notwithstanding he well vnderstandeth this language: and such is his brane constitution of bodie, as I thinke a more gallant Gentleman was neuer seene. But may it please your Maiestie to sende for the Wife of Baledon and her Daughter, as also the rich present abyding in your Porter: The Emperour requiting them with manie thanks, sent for the prisoners to be brought on land, commaunding the two Princes to bee vnarmed, and sent them two collie

The history of *Palmendos*.

Turkish Robes, which his Sonne Primaleon and Dytreus saide effectually executed, with all things els necessarie for men of such calling, in meane while he sent for the Emperesse and his Daughters, to behold the rare and precious Treasures sent by Palmendos.

When the Emperesse and her Daughters were come into the Hall, they entertained the strange Knights exceeding courteously, but Lecefin regarding the beautie of Phylocrista, grew into such conceite of her singuler feature, as he stode in his thoughts beyond all compare. Shee wyth her Sisters Florida, Bazilia and Melicia, for so were the Emperours Daughters named, gaue them a Maydens welcome to the Court, such as besmiled them towarde Knights errant, as also because they were Princes of so honourable birth. After that the Emperesse, her daughter, and the rest of the prisoners, through a mightie throng of people were brought to the Hallace, one of the Knights in behalfe of all the rest, kneeling before the Emperour, thus spake.

Mightie and invincible Monarche, the hardye Champion & slayer of Knights named Palmendos, who delivered us from cruell Baledon in the Isle of *Delphos*, hath sent us (with this inestimable Treasure) unto your Maiestie, as to the onelie Lozde and Prince of the worlde, of whom he carryeth most humble and religious opinion, that you should take compassion on our miseries, and graunt us access to our owne houses. Good frendes, said the Emperour, your honest report of this Knight, to whome I am so much beholding, doth make mee more earnestlie long to see him in our Court, whether you all (for his sake) are so hartily welcome, as ye shall well perceiue the same before yee depart, afterward (in Gods name) goe when ye please. And these were not wordes alone, but deedes did confirme the same, the Emperour rewarding each one of them with such liberall gifts, as they esteemed his largesse & munificence, equall with that of Xerxes, Iulius Caesar, or Alexander the

The history of *Palmendos*. 37

the great. Afterwarde hee sent for the Gyantesse and her daughter, and to the offered very honourable kindnes: but their harts were so swollen and confounded with græfe, as they would make no answer at all, whereupon he appointed them a convenient place in the Cittie, with provision of all thinges for their necessarie uses: but the Gyantesse falling into an extreame lunaticke, dyed soon after thereof, yet her Daughter became a Christian, and lyued long time in the Emperours favour. Now are all y^e sumptuous vtensilles brought befoze his Maiestie, the Idolles Chaire, the Crowne, the Scepter, Booke and the rest, which beeing well and aduisedly regarded, were iudged the like to be neuer seene befoze: whereupon his Maiestie tooke the Booke, labouring with al his strength & cunning to open the same, and after deliuered it to his Barons to trie what they could doo, but all their labour beeing lost, he said.

I thinke this Booke can bee opened by none other, then him onelie that conquered it, let it therefore bee carefullie kept till his coming. Nowe call I to minde the Damosels wordes, that departed so suddainlie without answer: and verilie I am perswaded this Knight is the man thee spake of, who hath sent vs this Treasure from the Isle of *Delphos*. With these speeches of the Emperour, diuers of his Knights grew somewhat offended, to heare such commendation passe on him who was vnknowne: wherefoze they intended if euer he came thether, to make such proufe of his valour and prowesse, as the Emperour shoulde perceiue he spake but by affection. Not long after, his Maiesty sent one of his cheefe Knights to *Delphos*, and with him such a trayne as becomed the expedition, there to see all thinges ordered to his highnes vse, and to preuent insurrections if anie were like to grow, giuing y^e Knight charge if he found *Palmendos* there, to request him with al speede to visite the Emperour. But the Knight came to short of

The history of *Palmendos*.

his intent, for he had sette saile towarde *Constantinople*, according as you shal heare heereafter : notwithstanding, the knight was very graciously welcommed thether, and the possession of the whole Island surrendered to him, which in the end was transferred to one of *Palmendos* homes, beeing a pleasant, fayre and opulent Countrey, navigable for all passengers whatsoeuer.

CHAP. XI.

Howe Palmendos sayling in the Aegean Sea, recovered the Saldanes Sonne of Babylon from Ocurites King of Culaquin, who rode along that coast of Greece: And howe after he had ouercome his strength, hee tooke him prysoner and sent him to the Emperour Palmerin, with dyuers Christians which he delyuered from his captiuitie.



Ifarano and Lecefin beeing no sooner set fro *Delphos*, but *Palmendos* followed the speedy building of the Monasterie, causing religious observations to be used in the Temple : for the people of the Island were good Christians, although the Gyant *Baldon* was a Pagan. The Monasterie being storied with faire Virgins, he would haue them called the Sisters of *Francelina*, and manie Ladies of great byrthe resorted thither, to liue religiously in seruice of the worldes Creator : *Palmendos* much delighting to behold the Christians Religion, meaning when time and place serued, to be further instructed therein.

Having ordered euerie thing to his own contentment,
and

The history of *Palmendos*. 38

and placed Guillardor in Justice till the Emperour sent some other : hee with Ozalio tooke shipping, sayling five daies with prosperous windes towards *Constantinople*, yet first he determined to lande in *Thrace*, because hee would heare some newes of the Emperours Courte, and of *Francelina* if possible he could. Riding thus with the favour of *Aolus* and *Neptune*, he came within sight of the two destroyed Townes *Sestus* and *Abydos*, when one of the Pilots certified him, that he sawe divers Ships and Foyles eagerlie fighting together, which made *Palmēdos* to come up on the decke, to see if he could discerne what they were. Hearing the great tumult and cry made in the vessels, especiallie in two that seemed better provided for warre then the other : hee was desirous to goe more neere them, wherefore he commaunded the Maister so to doe, that they might helpe them which too much were oppressed. Nowe to acquaint ye with the cause heereof, it is so, that when the Soldane of *Babylon* and *Alchidiana* understoode the marriage intended by the Emperour, betweene their daughter and *Dytreus* Prince of *Hungaria* : they were very ioyfull of so great alliance, and therefore would sende them great store of ryches by their youngest Sonne, who had not yet receiued his order of knighthood. This young Prince was named *Abenunco*, a gentle youth and very well giuen, who earnestly intreated his Mother, to obtaine so much of the Soldane his father, that after his Sisters marriage, he might stay a while at *Constantinople*, which sute at her request the Soldane graunted, and therefore sent him by Sea well accompanied with Knights. *Abenunco* sayling along the coast of *Thrace*, mette with *Ocurites* King of *Culaguin*, who was Sonne in law to the great Turke, and reputed the hardiest Knight among al the Turkish Nobilitie : his Maiestie having giuen his Daughter in marriage to this Barbarian, shee being one of the most accomplished Ladies in all Heathenesse. *Ocurites* knowing the inveterate mallice betwene the Emperour and his father in

The history of *Palmendos*.

Latwe, (the more to please him) prouided himselfe of good strength by Sea, and dailie came vppon the Coastes of Greece, sending vauntcourriers with strong Brigandines besoye him, to discouer what Christians stirred abroade, and sundry times tooke many of them captiues, as now he intended to doo by the Soldans Sonne. When Ocurites by his Streamers and banderolles heard of the *Babilonian* Prince, and knewe (withall) that his father was a cheefe friende to the Emperour: in great furie with his Ships he sette vpon him, Abenunco with his Knights defended themselves so well as they coude. During this conflicte *Palmendos* approached very nere them, and of a Galley filled with Christian slaves, he demaunded the cause of this fierce encounter.

Sir, answered one of the slaves, he to whom this great traine of shipping appertaineth, is Ocurites King of *Culquin*, and Sonne to the great Turke, that with diuers of his league & faction dailie coastes on Greece, to endamage the Emperour *Palmerin*, enemye to his Father, and those he hath nowe mette withal, belong to the Soldane of *Babilon*, they sayling (as we vnderstand) toward *Constantinople*. When the Prince heard what the Christian had said, he brauelie encouraged his Cousin *Ozario*, in assisting the wel-willers to the noble Emperour: so comming to the Kings Ship, he thus spake.

For shalt thou Ocurites offend so good a Prince, as is the Emperour of *Constantinople*, heere with he beganne to lay about him valiantlie, and *Ozario* not one ynche behind him, made the enemye well vnderstand his inuincible courage. *Palmendos* knowing the King by his rich Armour, gaue him such a peazant stroke with the hilttes of his Sword on the Helmet, as made him stagger, and at length fall downe, whe offering to rise againe, *Palmendos* caught him so strongly by the Helmet, as he pulde it violently frō of his head: keeping him stil vnder his Sword in such subiection, as at length he was carryed prisoner into the Prince
ces

The history of *Palmendos*. 39

res Cabin, and there committed him to the charge of foure trustie Knights. In meane while Ozalio fought with the Kings Brother, who vnderstanding that Ocurites was taken prisoner, did what he coulde to recouer him againe: but Ozalio kept betweene him and his purpose, still labouring him with so manie hardie strokes, as at length he smote his head frō his shoulders. The rest beholding theyr King taken and his Brother slayne, beside the great massacre made among them, and that they were no way able to withstand theyr fortune: a number fel headlong into the Sea, rather then they wold die vnder the enemies sword. Palmendos seeing no further resistance, but y^e the Turks were vtterly discomfited: he caused such prisoners as were taken to be made sure, the Ships likewise to bee seized on as his owne: then comming to Ozalio, whose forwardnes he commended, he willed him to see all things disposed as becommed such a victorie, afterward he embraced y^e Soldans Sonne, and diuers courteous ceremonies passing between them, the one for his happy deliuerance, the other reporting what he had doone was for the Emperours sake, at length Palmendos vsed these speeches.

My Lorde, willingly woulde I beare yce companie to *Constantinople*, but that a voyage of great importance doth vrgentlie call me to an other place, yet seeing you are deliuered from the Tyrant Ocurites, and all your Knights in sufficient safety, let me obtaine this fauour at your hands, to take the King with ye to *Constantinople*, and all y^e Christian prisoners deliuered from captiuitie. Them shall yee present on my behalfe to the Emperour Palmerin, requesting that this auncient Christian enemy may be safely kept, vntill I come to see his Maiestie, which shall bee with all the expedition I can. Woorthy Sir, answered Abenunco, it grieues me that your iourney lyes not presently to *Constantinople*, because I shoulde thinke my selfe happie in hauing your companie, being the man to whom I am continuallie bounde for my life and libertie: and

The history of *Palmendos*.

beereof I am assured, that ouer and aboue your gracious welcome, you shall winne the honour of the famous Tryptumpe, ordained by the Emperour at the marriage of my Sister with the Prince of *Hungaria*.

And hartilie sorrie am I, answered *Palmendos*, that I cannot be present in so woorthy an assemblie: whereof at this time you may well excuse mee, not doubting but I shall come with some sufficient amends for my stay. These speeches he vttered, his thoughts beeing farre otherwise, for so soone as he heard of the Toustes at *Constantinople*, he determined to goe thether secretlie, without making himselfe known to anie, but as a strange knight to aduenture his fortune among other: wherefore he departed from *Abenunco*, who offered him manie riche presents for his great kindnes, yet would not hee accept of anie. *Abenunco* returned him manie thanks, cheerefulie for his promise, that hee would in shorte time visite the Emperour in personne: so after many courteous speeches, and sundry familiar farewelles, *Palmendos* commaunded his Pilot to launche into the high Seas, for that he intended an other kind of course.

CHAP.

The history of *Palmendos*. 40

CHAP. XII.

Howe Abenunco arriued at Constantinople, whose comming greatly reioiced the Emperour, but much more his Sister Esquiuela. And howe Lynedes Lorde of the Isle of Lique, & the Countie of Pelada his Cozin, came to Ioust against the Knights of the Courte, attending the Tourney for the mariage of Ditreus.



Greatly did Abenunco comende his fortune, in finding so good succour at a time of such necessitie, and all the knights in his company held opinion, that *Palmendos* was the only flower of Chivalrie: but aboue all other the Christian slaves, accounting their deliuerance for a miracle, imagined the Autho^r thereof

was some great freende to the Emperour. In this way they sayled till they came to *Constantinople*, where his Ma^{iestie} being aduertised that the Soldans Sonne was arriued, commaunded *Primaleon*, *Ditreus*, and many of his best Barons to goe conduct him to the Court. In meane while, Abenunco clothing himselfe most sumptuously, caused the King *Ocurites* and the Christian prisoners to be carryed on shore, that hee might not fayle in the charge giuen him by *Palmendos*: so the *Babylonian* Prince riding to the Courte, with all the prisoners going orderlie before him, he gaue charge to one of his cheefest knights, that hee should present them to his Ma^{iestie}, and being come into the Emperours presence, the knight deliuered these speeches.

High and mightie Monarche of the world, behold heere
B. 4. the

The history of *Palmendos*.

the King of *Culaquin*, Sonne to the great *Turke*, who keeping the Seas with a stronge power to endaunger your Empire, our Maister the Prince *Abenunco* and wee, fell into his daunger: from which a woorthy Knight named *Palmendos*, by deedes of rare and hautie Chivalrie, deliuered vs in a time most needefull, and therefore hath sent bothe vs and him to your excellencie, desiring that *Ocurites* should be safely kept till he come himselfe. These sundry good turnes receiued from a Knight vnknowne, moue the Emperour into wonderfull admiration, and soe hee could not imagine whence they should proceede, therefore he was the more desirous to beholde the Knight: where, vpon hee committed the King into a strong Towre, commanding hee shoulde haue all thinges necessary for his health, and a Page to attende on him least he shoulde offend himselfe.

But nowe is *Abenunco* by *Primaleon* and the other Princes brought to the Emperour, who embracing him very honourably in his armes, gaue him such entertainement as beleeemed his estate, & soe hee was not yet knighted, he willed he should be bedfellow to his Sonne *Primaleon*, which vnitied a faithfull league of amitie betweene them, hoping one day to trauell as companions in Armes together. *Abenunco* hauing likewise tolde the Emperour of his good successe, and wonderfull deliuerance by the meanes of *Palmendos*: gaue no little contentment to *Rifarano* and *Lecefin*, who imagined themselves as much beholding to the Prince as anie. Afterward he was conducted to the Emperesse Chamber, where she and her Ladies graciously welcommed him: but especially the Princesse *Esquiuela* his Sister, because hee came to confirme what she most desired. My Lord and Brother, quoth she, nothing coulde happen to my greater contentment, then to haue your presence in the honour prepared for me, whereto seeing our gracious parents coulde not come, they haue for my sake sent you in their place: and doubt not but your entertain-

The history of *Palmendos*. 41

entertainment shall be such, as shall agree with theyr expectation and your owne worthines. Faire Sister, answered Abenunco, the Soldane our Father hearing what honour the Emperour intended, by giving you in marriage to the Prince Ditreus his Nephew, hath sent me to thank the Emperour on his behalfe, offering for this contract to articulate with his Daieslie, in all such things as with honour hee shall demaunde. As for our gracious Mother Alchidiana, she hath sent ye by me Jewels and Treasures befitting your degree, that on your marriage day yee may witness the royall race from whence you are descended, not doubting but before you depart this Courte, to make the magnificence of the *Babilonian* Prince so famous, as the most opulent Lozde of *Asia* shall not compare therewith. Divers other speeches passed betwene the Brother & the Sister, till the Coffers of Treasure were brought and delivered to the Princesse, which when Ditreus behelde, hee iudged them to exceede the limits of all frugalitie, & might full well beseme the greatest state in *Christendome*. Now did the Emperour cause the Tourney to be openly proclaimed, and the fift day following the marriage was solemnized, great store of worthy knights resorting day by day to the Court, that all the field appointed for Tryumphes was covered over with Tents.

Among other came thither Lynedes the Lozde of *Lique*, he that hazarded himselfe so farre in the adventure of *Francelina*, being (in sooth) reputed one of the most valiant men at Armes in all *Greece*, and the renowne of this marriage drew him from his Castell, accompanied onelie with the Countie of *Pelada* his Cousin, who albeit hee was younger then Lynedes, yet was he thought little inferiour to him in Chivalrie. This Countie had espoused a Ladie of great parentage, and loved her with such singuler affection, as hee brought her in company to see the Fountes at *Constantinople*. Being there arrived, they woulde not enter the Cittie, but sette uppe their Tent far distant from

The history of *Palmendos*.

all the rest, and afterward sent a Squire to the Courte, to publish that whosoever would hazard himselfe in y^e Tourney: shoulde finde two knights there ready in the fiede, that woulde foust with anie one durst enter the Lystes, such therefore as were minded to make p^roofe of their valour, might be entertained for thre or foure courses. These speeches being heard by the Duke of *Pera*, he went to the Squire, and thus answered.

You may my freende returne to your Masters, and say that such as are minded to foust, will not stay long ere they enter the fiede: then turning to the knights of the Court, he proceeded in this manner. Doubtlesse these knights are valiant and hardie, that are lothe to shewe themselves slothfull in any veruous exercise. With this answer the Squire went backe to the Tent, and the two Cozins being satisfied therewith, prepared strong Launces at the entraunce of their Pavilion, for all such as shold come to foust against them: but the Countie intreated Lynedes, to suffer him make y^e first triall of his fortune, which he did in regarde of his loue to his Ladie, who had caused the Tent to be so commodiously placed, as shee might at pleasure beholde all the pastimes, decking herselfe in most gorgeous attire, and brauelie attended on by her waighing woman, to out countenance such as came against her Lorde and Husband.

The Emperour vnderstanding what message y^e Squire had brought, imagined that these two knights were *Palmendos* and his Cozin *Ozario*: for when one thing continually beateth on a mans conceit, hee imagineth euery thing confor^mable to the same. Wherefore hee tolde his opinion to the Prince *Rifarano*, who could not think them to be the Lordes of *Tharsus*, yet to satisfie the Emperours minde, he mounted on horsebacke, and accompanied with other knights of the Court, rode to the Tent where the two Cozins remained. Saluting the Squires, hee entred finding Lynedes vnarmed, but his Cozin was prouided at
all

The history of *Palmendos*. 42

all points except his Helmet: whereupon he demanded if they were the Knights that sent the challenge to the Court: to whom the Lord of *Lique* answered, that they were, then Rifarano proceeded thus. Gentlemen, ye have attempted a thing (in mine opinion) but little for your ease: but I thinke you did it to this ende, that you might meete with some one to abate your pride and presumption.

When that comes to passe, answered Lynedes, wee shall but accompanie manie other, who vnable to effect their hautie enterprises, haue remained frustrate in theyr disleignes: in vaine therfore shal ye take any further care for our affaires, but if you wil goe Arme your selfe, return and proue what this Knight can do, who is moze desirous to fight with his Sworde then his tongue, otherwise you offer iniurie to the order, which euery noble minde prefereth as his proper life. Rifarano some what moued wyth these words, toke his leaue and returned to the Emperour assuring him that these Knights were not Palmendos and Ozalio, notwithstanding they seemed good & hardie Champions, descended of some great birthe, in that they were so woorthilie accompanied, with women of choysse and singular beautie, as also Gentlemen of ciuill behauiour. Hereupon many Knights Jousted with the Countie, who styll bare alway the honour of the felde, Lynedes all this while not arming himselfe, for the woorthie successe of his Cozin deserued high commendation, wherof his Lady was not a little proude, to see her husbände perfoyme such Chualrie. Rifarano and Lecefin envying the Counties glozy, intended to see how they shoulde speed in the Joust, yet they desired to defer it til the last day, when they vanquishing the Countie and Lynedes his Cozin, might beare alway the whole praise of the Tryumph: but others came in meane while and altered their intent, as you at large shall perceiue heereafter.

The history of *Palmendos*.

CHAP. XIII.

Howe Arnedes Sonne to the King of Fraunce, and Reinde his Cozin, Sonne to the King of Castile, came to Constantinople, where Arnedes vanquished Lynedes and his Cozin in the Ioust, by which occasion they were greatly honoured of the Emperour.



The King of Fraunce, Father to Lewes Duke of Burgundie, being at the extreame point of his life, among other things remembered, that when the peace was concluded betwene the Emperour Palmerin and him, they determined upon an alliance by marriage, if God graunted them issue wherby to do it: to

the end that in the herocall house of Fraunce, Sonnes and Daughters might be nourished, proceeding from such worthie auncesters, as the like might not be found thorow the whole worlde.

For this cause, when the time likewise shoulde conveniently agree therewith, he commaunded his Sonne to remember the Emperour of his promise: which Prince Lewes promising his dying Father to performe, with exceeding sorrow accomplished his funeralles, and making choise afterward for his owne fancie, in hope to fulfill his Fathers desire in his issue, hee married with the daughter to the King of Castile, by whom hee had three Sonnes, and two Daughters that were borne at a birth. His eldest Sonne was named Arnedes, whose minde was evermore given to Armes and Millitarie discipline, wherein time
and

The history of *Palmendos*. 43

and vse made him so expert, as he was esteemed the onelis Champion of *Fraunce*. It came so to passe, as the King of *Fraunce* married one of his Daughters with the King of *Scicilie*, at whose marriage Arnedes wunne such fame by his Chivalrie, as the report of him was blazed thozowe manie prouinces. To this marriage likewise came one of his Cozins, Sonne to the King of *Castile*, and named Recinde, who conceived so good liking of Arnedes behaviour, that they swoze an inuolable league of amitie betweene them twain, neuer to forsake eche others companie in matters of Armes: wherewith the Queene was highly contented, because shee looued her Cozin Recinde with intire affection.

King Lewes seeing his Sonne Arnedes of peeres to haue a Wife, and fearing he should els where dispose hys lyking, one day called him into his Chamber, and thus conferred with him. My Sonne, such is the naturall inclination of my loone towards thee, as I would not wyshe anie thing to thee, but to haue thee as well contented therewith as my selfe: to this end I vse these speeches, soz that our late kinglie Father of famous memoize, at the verie shutting vpp of his latestt dayes, gaue me charge to ioyne thee in marriage with the Emperours Daughter of *Constantinople*, that such issue (as no doubt) shall procede from you bothe, may some what resemble their famous auncesters. Wherefoze I am determined, right soone to send an Embassage to him, to sollicite this mariage which I hope he will like well of: and this I can assure thee, if I fame tell no leasings, that the Princesse Philocrista nowe aged fixeene yeres, is a Ladie of such rare & singuler beautie, as Nature hath not framed the like vnder the incouing of these eyght Spheres.

When the Prince Arnedes saw that his Father talked so courteously with him about these affayres, he humblye intreated him not to trauaile any further in y matter, soz there was time enough hereafter to deale in such oc-

The history of *Palmendos*.

caſions: wherewith the King pacified him, becauſe he ſaw his *Donne* ſo colde (as he thought) in matter of marriage, no; would he trouble him any moze therewith after ward. But the young Prince, wiſe and aduised in concealing his owne deſires, hauing long befoze heard faire *Philocrifta* commended beyond compare, as alſo the deedes of the Knights in the Emperour *Palmierins* Court, he had no leysure now to forbid them his remembraunce, ſo that ſayne would hee compaſſe a ſecrete iourney to *Conſtantinople*, intending if the Princeſſe pleaſed, to demaunde her of the Emperour in marriage, and if his Maieſtie would not conſent there, to, hee intended to do ſuch exployts in *Greece*, as the honourable prayſe of them ſhould compaſſe his loue. This was the project of *Arnedes* reſolution, which in ſecrete he imparted to his Cozin *Recinde*, who with mighty perſwaſions animated him heerein: bowing that till death they would loyallie continue freendly companions, and ſo well gouerne themſelues by diſguiſing theyr perſons, and contrarying their languages in theſe affayres, as the moſte ſkillfull head ſhoulde not ſearch the depth of their intent. When the two Cozins were thus determined, *Arnedes* imagining it no wiſedome to iugle with his Father, went and requested a fauour at his highnes hande, the effects whereof was thus.

Gracious Lozde and Father, quoth hee, my deſire is (without your diſpleaſure) that I may goe ſee the Princeſſe *Philocrifta*, as well to like as loue befoze any motion of marriage: and ſo; my Cozin *Recinde* will beare me company, I wold haue your Maieſtie ſo perſwaded, y in ſecrete diſguiſing we wil paſſe vnknozne of anie, much leſſe giue occaſion of ſuſpect what we are, not doubting but by our vertuous behauiour, to yeelde you content by our voyage, and our ſelues good report. Beſide, the woꝛlde is well acquainted therewith, that this Emperour of *Conſtantinople* had not wunne ſuch fame and renowne, but onely by the innumerable Tropheſ, erected in diuers Regions of his
youthful

The history of *Palmendos*. 44

youthfull trauailes, which are examples sufficient for knights of high desire, not to desist from worthy enterpryses for the object of death, who without regarde of time or place, pursueth in ambush the steppes of the woorthiest. For let doubt of our stay in Greece hinder vs, good father: for as we goe not to build any dwelling there, so is þ hope of our returne to be expected more speedie. It greatlie displeaseth mee, answered the King, that I haue promised to myne owne dyscontentment, and which much more wyll redownde to your disadvantage: but seeing I haue past my worde, and in thys sorte you meane personally to visite Greece, goe in Gods name, who guyde and sende you safely home agayne, els will your stay more hurt mee then you can imagine.

Humbly taking his leaue of the King, because he wold not haue his departure knowne, hee secretly gotte him to *Marseilles*, accompanied with none but his Cozin Recinde, his Dwarfse and thzee other, where finding a ship ready, they hoysed sayle and away, landing at the first porte they came to in Greece, and commaunding the Shyppe to stay for them at *Constantinople*. One day Arnedes & Recinde rested themselues where they landed, and the next day rode forward on theyr iourney, vnderstanding by the way what braue Tryumphes were ordayned at the Courte, which pleasing them not a little, they made such dilligent speede, as they arriued there thzee dayes before the sports were ended: euen at the very instant, when the Countie had vanquished an other knight in the Ioust. Arnedes beholding the braue behauiour of the Conquerer, and that the knights made daintie who shold try his fortune next, noting beside the honourable assemblie there present with the Emperour (who meruailed what these two new come knights should be, vntill hee had aduisedly marked theyr Armes, when immediatly hee iudged them to bee *Frenchmen* :) gaue the spurres to hys Horse and ranne against the Countye, each of them breaking theyr staves gallantly

The history of *Palmendos*.

gallantly without any further daunger. At the seconde course the Countie was unhorsed by Arnedes, whereat the Emperour and his Lordes very much reioyced, highly commending the behauiour of the *French Knight*. Speedes must we thinke that Lynedes was offended, seeing his Cousin throwne so furiously to the ground, wherefore Arming himselfe speedily and mounting on horse backe, with a very strong Launce he angerly encountred Arnedes, who gaue his enemye as good as hee brought. Lynedes was very chollericke that he had speede no better, wherupon at the seconde race, Arnedes met him so full in the carrire, as he cast him out of his saddle over the crupper of his Horse: he thinking to recover himselfe, and lothe to forsake the raynes of his byddle, caused his horse to fall backward upon him, that hee was the worse for this fall long time after. But Arnedes he remayned fresh & frolick, as though he had yet done nothing at all, wherefore hee came to his companion, saying.

Nowe let vs goe kisse my Lord the Emperours hand, seeing there is no more to be done here: and so in þe troupe they withdrew themselves, each one meruailing at thys *Frenchmans* valour, because they knew Lynedes was accounted one of the hardiest Knights in *Greece*. When the Emperour saw them coming toward him, hee anaunced himselfe to entertaine them, and embracing them graciously in his armes, sayd. Right welcome are yee Gentlemen into thys Countrey, where you haue exceedingly contented mee by your fortunate successe: let mee therefore know of whence and what ye are, that I may loue and esteeme ye accordingly. It is the wonted grace and vertue of your Maiestie, answered Arnedes, that makes ye euer more regard poore trauielling Knights, although they deserve be nothing equiualent: the renowne whereof spreading thorow al Regions, caused vs forsake *Fraunce* to come offer ye our seruice. Wee are, my Lord, Knights attending on the King of *Fraunce*, where hearing þe daily report, what
what

The history of *Palmendos.* 45

what magnificent Chivalrie was here continually exercised: we came (so please it your Maiestie) to live in your Court, as men willing to learne the rules of Partiall discipline, not doubting but to gaine such grace, as shall satisfie the desire that moved us hereto. I thanke you, quoth the Emperour for the paine you have endured in this journey, which ample declares the generositie of your braue mindes, because such principles cannot proceede but from hautie and resolute courage: with these wordes (for this daie) he returned to the Pallace, commaunding Arnedes to goe on his right hand, and Recinde on his left, they both meruailing to see the goodlie traine of knights that attended on the Emperour.

All the way his Maiestie eyed Arnedes verie much, imagining he saw the liuelie countenance of Lewes Duke of *Burgundie*: and therefore desired to know his name and parentage, telling him who he resembled in many points. In trueth my Lord, answered the *French Prince*, it not seemes me to dallie with your Maiestie, I am King Lewes his eldest Sonne, therfore I am the more like to him. And for his sake, said the Emperour, must I needes loue you the more, because heretofore I receiued by him and his Brother very great honour: yet for his highnes perceiued that Arnedes was willing to be vnknown, he cut off these speeches, and being come to the Pallace, after the Princes were bothe vnarmed, hee welcommed them as becomed theyr estates.

Primaleon dailie accompanied Arnedes and Recinde, because his Father had so commaunded him, yet could not the *French Prince* but meruaile, that all this while he might not see *Philocrista*, the cause whereof was, the Ladies were lothe to be seene till *Dytreus* wedding day, when each one would then surpasse in brauerie, till which time he was glad and faine to holde himselfe contented. Nowe had *Bruquell* his Dwarfie leysure to gette acquaintaunce with *Risdeno* Primaleons Dwarfie, for they were bothe

The history of *Palmendos*.

of like stature and qualitie, and therfore their familiaritie was not long in breeding. Lynedes & the Countie displeased with their hard fortune, yet they were in hope to recover their foile at the marriage Journey, which made their griefes the better pacified: now we leaue we them a while, to speake somewhat of the Princes of *Tharsus*.

CHAP. XIII.

Howe Palmendos and Ozalio landed foure dayes journey from Constantinople, from whence they parted after they had changed theyr Armour: and howe by the way they lodged in the house of an auncient Knight, of whom Palmendos heard the dyscourse of the aduventure of Francelina, and what they did afterward.



Our gentle Knight Palmendos, merilie sayled on, hoping in short time to content his earnest desires, and hauing left Abenunco by *Sestus* and *Abydos*, hee commanded his Pilot to strike to the next Port for *Constantinople*, so with fauourable wind and weather they came to *Saint Lordin*, which is a marine Cittie, foure daies journey from *Constantinople*. There hee and *Ozalio* went on shore, onelie to chaunge their Armour & Shelds, because they would gladlie escape vnkown: and hauing made a quicke dispatch, they rode till they came to y^e house of an auncient Knight, poore in goods, but noble of harte and person, who inuited them frændly to be his guesstes: and there were they right courteously entertained, though not with daintie and delicate viands, yet with indifferent good

The history of *Palmendos*. 46

good cheere and kind humanitie, which speciallie proceeded from the Knights Wife and her faire Daughter, who dilligentlie noted the behaniour of these Knightes. Such was the countenance of the young Damosell, as by the continual office of her eyes, her hart began to be somewhat touched, and saine woulde shee participate of the pleasure her minde conceiued: whereto *Palmendos* likewise was somewhat prouoked, seeing his eyes ouerbuffed with bathing in the floode of delight, which the pzelence of thys Damosell onelie procured.

All Supper time these queint glaunces endured, when among other talke they had together, the olde Knight demanded of his guesstes, if they trauailed to the Tourney at *Constantinople*: so, yester day, quoth hee, came I thence, not a little meruailing, to see the number of Knights come thether from all Countreyes: herewith he discoursed the successe of *Arnedes* against the Countie of *Pelada* and hys Cozin, likewise howe the two *Frenchmen* continued Maysters of the fiede. But canne none in all the Emperours Courte, quoth *Palmendos*, where are such stoze of valiant Gentlemē, out goe those *French* Cozins in deeds of Armes? Cruelie Sir, answered the old Knight, it is a matter much to be meruailed, neuer thelesse, I thinke if *Belcar* donne to the King of *Hungaria* & Brother to the Bridegrome that shall be, coulde come thether, he woulde dispossesse y *Frenchmen* of the victorie, which they haue gotten of the Countie and Lynedes, considering what fame is dailie bzuited abroad of him, so, his rare prowesse in garding the aduventure of *Francelina*. And since y time of his famous attēpt, no Knight hath arriued there in hope to ende the enchantment, but *Belcar* euermoze hath bene his Conquerour, yet *Francelina* continueth in the Castell of the Fayries styll, and shall till some Knight (moe fortunat then *Belcar*) can gette her forth, notwithstanding, hee hath vowed no one shall doe it, seeing himselfe hath fayled in the tryall, except he first surpasse him in valour and prowesse.

8. The history of *Palmendos*.

Palmendos hearing the name of *Francelina*, was assailed with such a suddaine & vehement passion, proceeding from the unquenchable flame, wherein his hart lay burning for her loue: as his countenaunce altered, and his very soule was touched with the word *Francelina*. Wherefore most instantlie he desired the knight his hoste, to tell him of what race the Ladie was descended, and (withall) to proceede in discourse of the aduenture, which so manie worthy knights had lost their labours about: like wise to tell him, in what Country the Castell was, where the Fairies had appointed this enchantment, because he had sundrie times heard speeches therof, yet could not meete with any one to resalue him of the truth.

Knowe then good Sir, answered the old knight, that this Ladie is one of the fairest and moste gracious Princess; that this earthlie habitation enioyes betwene the two Tropiques of heauen, Daughter to the King of *Thessalie*, now prisoner to the great Turke, shee being taken forth of her Cradle, and enclosed in the Castell of *Cande*, by the three enchanting Sisters of the Island, because they foresaw by the Magicall arte, that her Father (who was the noble Prince) neuer could be deliuered from the captiuitie of the Infidels, but by the meanes of some perfect accomplished knight. Thus did they direct this enchantment, that the renowne of *Francelinas* beautie, might be blazed by them through all Regions, and desire to gaine the kingdome of *Thessalie*, (for hee that shall deliuer the Ladie, must enioy her as his Wife, next heire after the death of y^e captiue King) might encourage knights to come prooue this aduenture: whether many haue done in hope of happy conquest, as the afore named Prince *Belcar* did, but he wants strength as sundry other haue done, yet will he make the access to this fortreffe more difficult, untill hee for whom the Princess is destined, arrive there with such puissance and magnanimite, as shall enforce him to forsake the place. Manie other things as

concer

The history of *Palmerinos*. I 47

concerning the *Historie* of *Francelina* (alreadie set downe in the Booke of *Palmerin d'Oliva*) did the olde Knight recount to the Prince *Palmendos*, who hauing with greater attention noted all, was stricken mute and much amazed: for so was his spirit raryed a waile with true and diuers thoughts, that he could hardlie tel what to doe or say. Now he remembers the olde *Romans* wordes, and saue there was some likelihoode of trueth in them, thinking because shee had spoken so much of *Francelina*, that shee was one of the *Fayries* which framed this enchauntment: the ende and abolishing whereof hee thought was reserved for him onely, comparing all passed comedures together, which made his hart conceiue incredible ioy, and thus often to parle with himselfe.

Alas *Palmendos*, well mightest thou account thy selfe fauoured of thy *Starres* and *Fortune*, if thou couldest conquer a *Ladie* of so faire and perfect beautie, and thereby attaine the Kingdome of *Thessalie*, adioyning to the confines of thy Lord and *Father's* Empire. Such was his inward ioy conceiued by these newes, in hearing her spoken of whom his hart most of all honoured, as he said to the olde Knight. When you vnderstand, gentle Sir, that *Palmendos* is come to the Emperours Court, let me intreate you to trauaile thither, and there shall I cause him to requite the courtesie, which we beeing Strangers haue heere receiued. Then commaunded he one of his *Squires* to bring a great bagge of Gold and Jewels, which hee powred forth vppon the Table, giuing the olde Knight and his Daughter the most part thereof: to the end hee should see her honourable married, and furnish her with all things becomming such a beautifull Bride. The Knight and his daughter seeing so much Treasure, fell downe on their knees, and wou'd haue kissed his hande: but he very kindly tooke them vppe in his armes, saying this was nothing in respect of that he would doe for the hereafter. For his minde beeing euer given to liberalitie, receiued such contentment

The history of *Palmendos*.

by the speeches of his Hoste : as rare and precious thinges seemed of no account, for her swete sake who was by God, desse and Mistres of his hart. All this night hee passed in premeditating what hee ought to do in the present occasion, at length he resolved to goe see the Tourney, without making himselfe knowne to anie one, because soone after he would iourney to the Isle of *Carderia*, heerupon he sent a Squire in the morning to *S. Lordin*, to leaue order that the Sbypp should meete him at *Macedon*. Then courteously taking their leaue, *Ozario* and he rode towarde *Constantinople*, whether the old knight wold haue bozne them companie, but *Palmendos* perswaded him to the contrarie, and so sette away in great haste, arriuing in the euening within two miles of *Constantinople*, from whence he sent a Squire to the Cittie, to vnderstand what was done at the Court, and when the cheefest day for the Tourney shoulde be. The Squire well discharged his Maisters commaund, and returned with full satisfiing him in every point, wherefore *Palmendos* and *Ozario* determined betweene themselves, not to ryde together in companie, but eche one alone with his Squire, and to returne thence very secretly againe : nor woulde they stay there but the two cheefest dayes, least happilie they might be discovered, and so slack their iourney to the Isle of *Carderia*.

CHAP.

The history of *Palmendos*. 48

CHAP. XV.

Howe Palmendos came to Constantinople, where he wunne the honour and pryze of the first Tourney: and how he intended to depart thence on the morrowe, least he should be sought for on that occasion, & what els happened.



When the long expected daie of mariage was come, the Empe-
rour with all his knights were
very richlie clothed, but especi-
ally Arnedes, Son to the King
of Fraunce, hee was exceeding
bzaue bothe in attire and coun-
tenaunce, for the hope he had to
see faire Philocrista, to whom he
hadde religiously dedicated his

hart.

So we set they forwarde in order to the Temple, the
Empresse with Phylocrista and her other Daughters ac-
companied the Byrde, with al the Ladies of blood royal in
the Courte: so that if one shoulde sitte downe to decipher
their sumptuous attire, or els in speeches to comende theyr
surpassing beautie, it would over-travaile the eloquence of
Demosthenes or Cicero. But Philocrista was the sayrest
starre among them all, which drew the Prince Arnedes
minde into such admiration, as hadde not his eyes beene
witnesses of the same, hardlie coulde report haue induced
him to beleue it. For euen as the Sunne, the most excel-
lent of all the Planettes, shewing it selfe in the Horizon,
dooth confounde the brightnes of all the starres together,
and dazels theyr eyes which long gaze thereon: euen so re-

P. 4.

sembled

24 The history of *Palmendos*.

sembled the *Princesse Philocrista*, whose celestiall portraiture disgraced all the other Ladies, and altered the iudgement of *Arnedes* in such sort, as he reputed her far beyond the *Goddesse*, that appeared to the *Sheephearde Paris* on the *Mountaine of Ida*, when of him she was iudged to bee sayest of the three.

The *Empresse* and her Ladies all mounted on theyr *Palfreyes*, with such pompe and state as was neuer scene the like: *Primalcon* on a lustie Courser of *Barbarie*, wyth rich caparisons after the *Turkishe* manner, conducted the *Byrde*, and *Abenunco* her Brother rode with the *Princesse Philocrista*. *Lecefin* who looued her more aduisedlie, rode on her other side for companys sake, but *Arnedes* who loue impatiently ouermastred, vsed such meanes by managing his Horse, as he gotte the *Prince of Babilon* out of his place, indoued thereto by earnest desire, that he might contemplate her beautie more easilie: whereat *Lecefin* was meruailously offended, conceiuing a mortall hatred against him, perceiving he had a ryuall in his loue. *Recind* accompanied the *Princesse Melicia*, who in his eye seemed bothe fayre and modest, *Rifarano* telling her by the way, that this knight came with him which conquered the Countie, and so: his laudable vertues deserued estimation: wherupon she began to conferre with *Recinde*, which she coulde doe with singuler regarde, in respecte of the rare gyfts bestowed on her by nature. In breefe, this royall trayne is come to the Temple, and there is the marriage sollemnlie effected, returning to the Pallace with selfe, same maiestie they went thether. What should we waste time in speaking of the feaste, when there is none so simple but considereth, that the feastes of Emperours exceede common repetition: then may wee repute this sollemnitic aunswerable to that of the Gods, made at the nuptialles of *Peleus* with the *Goddesse Thetis*. After Dinner the Lordes and Ladies fell to dauncing, a fitte occasion for Louers to commune with theyr Ladies, yet dyssembled wyth

The history of *Palmendos*. 49

With such cunning modestie, as the eye and action were chiefe messengers of the hart, eche Ladie holding such opinion of her beloued, as their seuerall hope was for the honour of the Tourney.

The time being so passed ouer, as the newe married couple must to þ place of amorous contentation, the Emperesse with her Daughters brought Esquiuela into þ bride Chamber, leauing her in bedde attending for the comming of the Bridegrome, who was soone after honourably conducted thether by the Emperour, and so committed to enioy her whom he had so long desired. Now are þ Knights close in their Chambers, when Arnedes thus communed with Recinde. What thinke yee Cozin of the beantie of Madame Philocrista? did you euer see a moze rare & perfect creature? right soone must I giue end to these bzgent affaires, and ease the burthen of mine ouer-charged spirit: therefore wil I presentlie dispatch a Courier to the King my ffather, that he may with speede send honourable Embassadors to the Emperour, whereby this desired marriage may be concluded. Meane while I wil sound the bottome of this amorous floode, and trie if the iudgement of sayze Philocrista, bee aunswerable to her excelling beantie, and if the inward vertue agree with the outward singuler perfections, I may repute my selfe the happiest Knight in the world, in compassing the looue of so inestimable a Jewell. In soth my Lord, aunswered Recinde, great cause haue ye to commend the Lady, and I desire that the like fortunate successe may befall mee, as I doubt not but will speedilie happen to you: for on mine owne behalfe, the grace and courtesie of Melicia hath giuen me a fauourable entrahce, which if it proceed not to my harts desire, much better had it beene that I neuer had scene her. With these wordes Arnedes embraced his Cozin, saying. Howe sweetlie doo these speeches sound in mine cares, seeing thereby thou art my trustie companion in all thinges: lette this hope perswade thee, that he on whom all actions doo depende, wyll

R. 1.

by

The history of *Palmendos*.

by his diuine bountie so direct our course, as we shall enjoy a successfull ende. If I speeke according to my hartes content, in thy cause will I endeavour my selfe to the vttermost: therefore let vs continue our resolute courage, and make the *Grecians* vnderstand, that *Fraunce* yelds as good knights as anie Countrey els, and thus concluding, they slept for that night.

On the morowe, the Emperour, the Emperesse, the Bride and the young Princesses, went to the Scaffoldes richlie prepared for the sight of the Tourney, where no voyde place was left, but euery where filled with Lords, Ladies and Gentlewomen. Wonderfull was the resort of knights and hardie Champions, eche one in Armour beerie costlie and curious, hauing their fetters, pendants and fauours, deckt with the deuises and coullers of theyr Ladies, as it was a most beautifull spectacle to beholde them, yet hereon consists not the substance of our Historie. Now *Stryue Lynedes* and the Countie his Cozin like two furious Lyons, to recouer the foyle they sustained by *Arnedes*: who perceiuing this was the time to winne him honour, when the Goddess of his thoughts late to beholde him, welcommed the challengers as hee had done before. In like sort did *Rifarano* behaue himselfe, for he vnhoised euerie knight that ranne against him. But by this time is *Ozario* got in through y^e thronge, and he begins to deale with the Courtiers very roughlie, which made the Lordes and Ladies wonder what hee was. And then *Palmendos* seeing his freende well wearied, comes brauely prauncing into the fielde, so disguised as *Abenunco* and *Rifarano* could not knowe him. A while hee stode regarding the Emperour his father, so honourably placed with his noble Lordes and Barons on the Scaffoldes: then viewing the Emperesse with her gracious traine of Ladies, he wondered at such pompe and magnificence, thus speaking to himselfe.

Soueraigne Creator, and director of all things, how
am

The history of *Palmendos*. 50

am I bounde in duetie to thy Maestie, hauing made me the Sonne of such a Father: as not onlie is reputed the best Knight vnder heauē, but also is the mightiest Prince on the face of the earth. Seeing then thou hast bestowed on me such grace and fauour, as I shoulde issue from such an excellent personage, I must endenour my selfe to resemble him, and by some thing declare that I am his Sonne: for though nowe I goe against the Knightes of his Court, I hope hee shall haue small cause to mislike of mee, when he knowes my forwardnes in other matters on his Maesties behalfe.

Then beholding a Knight readie to encounter him, he brake off his musings, and gaue him so braue a welcome, as he tumbled headlong downe to the ground. Like successe had diuers other Knights of the Courte, which Arnedes angerlie seeking to reuenge, accompanied the other in misfortune, and after him Pernedin, Sonne to the Duke of Pera, one of the best esteemed Knights in Greece. Rifarano next ranne against Palmendos, and thre courses they past brauelie with the brake of the Launce, but at the fourth Rifarano was dismounted: whereupon Recinde came to reuenge his Cozin Arnedes foyle, whose fortune was as bad as any of the other, and Lecefin had his disgrace likewise for companie.

The Emperour moued to admire this Chualrie, ignorant what this gallant shoulde be, affirmed that hee neuer sawe his equall in prowesse: the like did Primaleon, being very desirous to know his name, to whom Abenunco answered, that he imagined him to be Palmendos, because hee much resembled him in braue constitution of bodie. At these speeches the Emperour was exceeding ioyful, requesting Abenunco to goe vnderstand the trueth thereof: but Palmendos had so thrust himselfe in the thickest of the crowde, which now went forth of the Lyfles, because the sports were ended for that day, as Abenunco could by no meanes come neere him, and therefore was fayne to

The history of *Palmendos*.

return vnresolved. So went Palmendos closely to his lodging againe, where being vnarmed, he found he had receiued three woundes that day in y^e Foust, the greatest whereof he took by Recinde the Prince of Spayne, but when hee saue Ozalio in good disposition, he was right ioyfull, commending him for his woozthy behauiour. And so hee was wounded, he stayed there two dayes without returning to Constantinople, least if he went againe, his intent might be pzeunted: afterwarde he rode to the Realme of *Macedon*, in the selfe same Armes he wore at the Tourney, continually hauing *Francelina* in his minde.

CHAP. XVI.

What conference Arnedes had with the Princesse Philocrista after Supper, whereupon he sent a messenger to the King his Father: and howe after Recinde, Rifarano and other, had wonne the pryze of the seconde Tourney, they intended to follow in searche of the Prince Palmendos.



Erre much ashamed were the vanquished knights, of y^e harde entertainment they had receiued by Palmendos, and moſte of all the Prince Arnedes, because hee was vnhozsed befoze hys Mistresse Philocrista, wherfoze he vowed to be reuenged, or hee woulde die the death, and so diuers other knights that murmured against the Conquerer, did the like. But the Emperour perceiuing this discontentment, came to Arnedes, Recinde, and Rifarano, and to put them from these melancholie

The history of *Palmendos*. 51

cholie conceits, hee shewed them verie pleasaunt countenance: saying they ought not to mislike with what had happened, in that themselves shewed very sufficient Chivalric, and desired them at the next Tourney to compass the knowledge of the strange knight. If hee come againe, answered Arnedes, it may bee happie to his disadvantage: for he hauing already disgraced so manie, the sports will hardlie ende without his foyle. By this time was Abenunco come backe to the Emperour, declaring howe hee could not speede of his intent, wherwith his Maesty somewhat offended, said.

For will anie quiet sleepe enter my head, vntill I know the name of that worthy knight: and were it not I shold be esteemed ouer fond, I woulde my selfe trauaile tyll I founde him. All the knights meruailing at these speeches, concluded when the Tryumphes were ended, if so bee the strange knight returned not againe, to aduenture themselves in the searche of him: and they who were most forward heereto, were Arnedes, Recinde, Rifarano, Lecefin, and Pernedin, Sonne to the Duke of *Pera*, these gallants without any further conference together, constantly vowed to die, or bring backe the knight againe to the Emperour, if they might meete with him in anie place. Supper being ended, Primaleon and Ditreus tooke Arnedes & Recinde with them, going to sitte and deuise with the Ladies, wher Arnedes got the meane to courte Philocrista, and Recinde his chosen Mistresse Melicia: what contentment they receiued by this good opportunitie, I referre to such as are desirous to breake the yle of their amorous passions, to them that hold them in so seuerer seruitude. Diuers familiar speeches tossed vp and downe, as of the Tourney and their unhappy disgrace: Philocrista pittying that Arnedes should take it so discontentedly, thus spake. He thinks (Sir) you shoulde not be offended at so small a matter, for oftentimes the best knights haue no better successe: and we haue so well beheld your valiancie, that y Conquerers

The history of *Palmendos*.

haue cause to complaine of your coming, as the vanquished haue of the knight departed, who as yet is vnknown to any in this Court. Arnedes hearing the gentle speeches of Philocrista, bashfull modestie withheld him a while from making anie answer, yet at length loone vnlocked his lips in this manner.

Madame, quoth he, the rare ornaments wherewith nature hath accompanied your diuine perfection, causeth you to speake so fauourable on my behalfe, although no desert in me can appzehende the least part of this kindnesse: but were I possessed with anie such abilitie, the very glaunce of her eye, who hath power to commaunde me, would increase my strength and make me inuincible, wherfore my desires cannot be satisfied, till I recover my libertie lost in this Iourney, the conceite whereof is moze intollerable to me, then the laboꝝ to Sisyphus in rolling the restless stone. The heauens will further your attempt heerein, answered Philocrista, and I hartlie desire it may so come to passe, because it were against reason, that you coming so farre to see my Loꝝde the Emperour, should receiue so vnkind a rewarde foꝝ your labour. This sweete reply redoubled the French Princes ioy, foꝝ which he humbly thanked Philocrista, with so manie courtesies & amorous shewes, as she well perceiued the effect of his greefe, proceeded fro the passions of a louers spirit.

Recinde (on the other side) had so communed with Melicia, as she perceiuing howe manie offers he made to her knight, fauourably gaue him entertainment: & moze then any thing els, it pleased him to note her beautie, wisdom and good grace, which sette his eyes and all his senses to worke. And if they that are in such delight wyth their Ladies, giue some refrigeration to their harts enflamed with the fire of loue: how could Lecefin but be in extreame iealousie, seeing his ryuall thus to parle with Philocrista? gladlie could he haue wished him without raunsome in the strongest pꝛysonne of *Persia*. But nowe is the
howe

The history of *Palmendos*. 52

howe of rest come, when the Emperour withdrew himselfe to his Chamber, and al the Knights likewise to their lodgings, where Arnedes still meditating on the words of his beloued, immediatly wrote to the King his father, that hee shoulde sende Embassadors to the Emperour for conclusion of the marriage: and til they came he would there stay at the Court, without any further speeches of the matter till their arrivall, so sealing his paquet as it shold bee deliuered to his Fathers hands, he sent one of his Squires the next morning away therewith in poste, who made no lesse speede then the Prince had commaunded him. Afterward he called Bruquell his Dwarfie aside, commaunding him not to stirre out of *Constantinople*, because hee was to depart about some matters of importance, and if the Emperour in meane while asked for him, to make him that answer, or anie other that enquired after him. Moreover, that he should from time to time conferre with the Princessesse *Philocrista*, assuring her of his zealous affection to her service, which that he might the better execute, he was rydden abroade to take the ayze of the fields: the Dwarfie very willinglie performed euery thing hee had in charge, not daring to breake the least article hee was commaunded.

The time beeing come of the Tourney, rare Chualrie was there deliuered on all sides, but Arnedes, Recinde and Rifarano had the cheefest honour, attending when the strange Knight shoulde shewe himselfe againe: and when they sawe he came not, they immediatlie determined the execution of their enterpryse, without returning into the Cittie, or knowing which way each other rode, but euery took the chauce as Fortune directed them. The Emperour was glad that his Knights had wonne the day, yet could hee not but meruaile that the stranger was seene no more: then comming to the Pallace, & seeing none of these five which were departed in the search of *Palmendos*, hee coulde not tell what to imagine. Of euery one he desired to

22 The history of *Palmendos*.

he resolved, yet coulde he not be answered to his content; wherefore Bruquell made answer for his Maister as hee was commaunded: which made his Maistrie then to conceiue the trueth indeede, whereof he was not a little glad, hoping nowe to heare moze of the strange knight. When the sollemne Feast for þ marriage was ended, the knights returned to their owne Countreys; so did Ditreus and Esquinela towarde *Hungarie*, with an honourable trayne sent by the Emperoꝝ. Philocrista was soꝛie for the departure of Esquinela, whom she loued as she had bene her sister, because fro their young yeres they were educated together: noꝝ could Abenunco her Brother goe with the so farre as happilie hee woulde, because the league of amitie betwene him and Primaleon enforced him to stay. King Frysol received his Sonne Ditreus and his faire Daughter Esquinela with incredible ioy, humbly (by Letters) thanking the Emperoꝝ for the honoꝝ he had done him, returning his knights with rich and precious gifts. But come we now to the three knights, that were departed in searche after Palmendos.

CHAP. XVII.

How Arnedes met with Palmendos, who left him halfe dead, and had afterward bene slayne by Leccfin if Pernedin had not happily arriued: & what folowed.



Alreadie you haue hearde, howe Arnedes secretly departed fro *Constantinople*, in searche of the knight that foyled him in the Tourney, demanding of euerie one hee mette by the way, if they saw not a knight in redde Armour, hauing a little Silver flower for his deuise in his Shield:

The history of *Palmendos*. 53

Shield : but no one could answer him to his expectation, whereupon, the night being hard at hand, he came to an Hermitage at the foote of a Mountaine, where with the olde Father he lodged that night, contented with his poore and homelie refection. On the morrow, bidding his Hoste courteously farewell, hee had not ridden an arrowe shotte from the Hermitage, but hee espied two Knights come riding together, and staying to see what they were, at length he knew the one to be Palmendos, which good happe pleasing him not a little, hee intended by faire meanes or force to cause him returne again, wherefore he came to him with these words.

Sir Knight. I think my selfe favoured of Fortune by meeting you heere, in that I left the Emperours Court for nothing els but to seeke you, because his Maiestie desireth to see and know you, in respect of your braue behaviour at the Tourney : therefore I entreate ye for the love ye beare his highnes, to return back with me, that I may discharge my promise heerein to his Maiestie. You did not wel Sir, answered Palmendos, to promise anie thing depending on an other mans wil, and for at this time I haue urgent occasions els where, I cannot satisfie his highnes desire, albeit I am readie in anie thing els to do him service, and so I beseeche you answer on my behalfe. Knight, quoth Arnedes, I pray you consider hereon a little better, and thinke that such speeches cannot discharge mee of my dutie : therefore determine right sone to goe with mee willingly, otherwise I must compell yee to returne perforce. Perforce? no, said Palmendos well may I goe with my wil if so be I please. I wish it for your good answered Arnedes, and the remembraunce of your valour in the Tourney, causeth mee to beare with you very much : but seeing you will not willinglye yeelde heereto, provide for y Combat, and thinke not that your braverie at the Trumpher, shall anie thing auaille yee now in this place. If yee will needs enforce me to it, quoth Palmendos, let yours then

The history of *Palmendos*.

be the shame : as for my selfe, in respect of my looue to the Emperour, I woulde be lothe to Combat with yee. Whereupon they so furiously encountred together, that bothe of them were sent to the ground, and after ward they fought a cruell Combat at the Sword, till Arnedes with þ great expence of his bloode, hauing receiued many a greuous wounde, fell downe at the Prince of *Tarsus* fete, who hauing made cleare his Sword that was very bloodie, and put it into the sheath, said.

I thinke yee will not sake heereafter to enforce anye knight, remembzng how deuelie you haue payde for this boldnes : so mounting on horsebacke, (albeit hee was likewise wounded) hee rode on his iourney with *Oz*. The Hermit where Arnedes lodged all night, hauing behelde this Combat, moued with charitie and compassion came downe the Mountaine, to succour Arnedes who lay bleeding in the grasse, and vnclasping his Helmet to giue him ayre, in short time hee recovered his senses againe : when seeing none but the Hermitte, and þ the knight was gone, he reputed it for an act of great humamitie, in not kylling him out-right, his life standing at his mercie, afterwarde, he thus spake to himselfe. What shall I now doe, if not complaine on the instabilitie of Fortune ? Was not my coming into these Countreyes unhappie, where I thought to winne honour and renowne, when all things turne to my shame & reproose : Sith my strength is not correspondent to the valoure of my minde, I must giue over the exercise of Armes, which Fortune (I see) enuies I should follow. Longer would he haue continued in these pensiuo mones, but the Hermit interrupted him in this manner.

My Sonne, giue thanks to him that delivered thee out of the knights hands, and hath not suffered both bodie and soule to perrish : let idle and vndecent thoughtes bee nowe abandoned, and lift thy minde to the place of eternall comfort. With these wordes he bound vp his wounds so well as he could, minding to lead him to his Hermitage, but

The history of *Palmendos*. 54

but as one mischaunce happeneth not alone, so fell it out at this instant, for hee was no sooner gotten on foot, but Lecefin his mortall enemye arrived, and knowing him to be his rival in love, drawing his sword, thus spake. Now shall I teach thee my capitall enemye, what it is to loose her whom thou art not worthy to serve, and that shall I make thee presently confesse, or buy thy bolones with the price of thy blood: for a Ladie of so rare perfections, standeth too farre out of a *Frenchmans* reach. Herewith he violently strooke at Arnedes, whom the good olde Hermit seeing in such dangerous case, tooke him in his Armes, desiring Lecefin not to seeke his death, that had of late escaped it so nere. But Lecefin being a Spoor, and therefore the more inexorable, wold give no eare to his words, but cruelly gave the olde man such a stroke on the head, as therewith he fell downe dead to the ground. Ah dogged and disloyall Traytour, said Arnedes, when he beheld this tragical act. Why hast thou slayne this religious father that never offended thee: the heavens I hope will not let thee passe unpunished, but plague thee as such a damnable deede requireth.

So taking his sword, as well as he might, by reason of his former hurt, he seekes to defende himselfe and revenge the Hermits death: but all was in vaine, (for without a meruailous chaunce) Arnedes death was nowe ordained. In a happy houre arrived there Pernedin, sonne to the Duke of *Pera*, one of them that departed in y^e search of *Palmendos*, who knowing both the Combatants, stepped betweene them, saying. Why how now Gentlemen? are courtly freendes become enemies in field? Arnedes who was no longer able to holde out, falling downe to the earth, sayd.

Ah Pernedin, revenge my wrong on this inhumaine wretch, who seeing mee cruellie wounded before, by the knight that bare away the honour of the Tourney, without any cause sette violently upon me: and this villainous

The history of *Palmendos*.

Whoze, not content to wronge mee alone, hath slayne this holie Hermit, because he dissuaded him from dealing with me, that had bene so hardlie intreated befoze. What tyrannie is this in a knight? answered Pernedin, by my sword, did not my loone so Rifarano ouer-rule mee, the gentle Prince that brought thee to y Court, heere I wold make thee to brenthe thy last: but I shall declare this treason befoze the Emperoꝝ & his Barons. What manhood thou hast vnto a wounded man, whom y durst not deale with had he bene in health: wherefoze gette thee gone I aduise thee, or I shall sende thine accursed soule to hel. At these wordes, Lecchin was so ashamed of himselfe, as mounting presently on Arnedes Horse, he rode away not speaking to eyther of them, knowing hee had notoziously blemished his honour: wherefoze he went to a Monasterie of Nunnes neere at hande, to haue his woundes bounde vp that he had receiued by Arnedes.

When the Sisters knewe that hee was of the Emperours Court, they entertained him very courteously, and one of them being a cunning Chirurgion, vndertooke in shorte time to heale his woundes. Nowe was Pernedin both offended and greeued, to see the olde Hermitte slaine and Arnedes in such daunger, wherefoze calling the Poince that alwaies attended on the olde Father, they leade the wounded Prince into the Hermitage, and afterwarde fetching the dead bodie, buryed it as they coude conuenientlie, applying soueraigne salues (whereof the good olde man was neuer vnprouided) to Arnedes woundes. But Pernedin seeing there was no moze helpe, and they likewise ignorant in those kind of vnquents, thought it moze meete they should goe strait to the Cittie of *Constantinople*.

There may ye, quoth he, sooner recover your health, because men of skill and knowledge shall take special care of you: and soz my parte I will willinglie accompany you thither, albeit I haue not sped in y cause of my departure.

The history of *Palmendos*. 55

It will be to my shame, answered Arnedes, that the Emperour should see me in this dangerous plight: notwithstanding, I will at this present be counselled by you, being neuer able to recompence thys honourable kindnes.

CHAP. XVIII.

How Pernedin brought Arnedes to Constantinople, where the Emperour, the Empresse, with theyr Daughters Philocrista and Melicia came to visite him: and what talke the two Dwarfes had together.



Resently after that Arnedes was brought (by the meanes of Pernedin) to Constantinople in a Litter, because he could not endure to sit on horsebacke: newes of this mischance was brought to the Emperour, who growing into extreme anger against the Dooze, said. Well may Lecefin resemble the Soldane his father, a man full of trecherous and ignoble practises, but he must not thus thinke to wrong a Prince of France. So stepping frowninglie from his Chayze, hee went to the Princes Chamber to see him, charging his Physicians and Chirurgions to tende him so well, as if they had his owne person in cure.

Then Arnedes reuealed the whole discourse of that which happened between Palmendos and him, at the end whereof the Emperour thus answered. I wonder that the Knight should be so desirous to doe me seruice, and yet dooth flye in this sort from mee, doubtlesse hee is gone to pzooue the aduenture of Francelina, if hee rode that way

The history of *Palmendos*.

you say he did, and it may be his fortune to ende it I hope, except our Nephewe Belcar excēde him in valour, & that I can hardly beleene he will. When the Emperoz departed, hee commaunded that the Emperesse and her Daughters should goe visite the Prince, which shee accordinglye did, taking Philocrista and Melicia with her, shee being greatly offended at the iniurie done to Arnedes. And Philocrista very much bemoaned his mishappe, yet wiselie and discreetlie as became a sober virgin, for the looue shee bare him was deriued from gentlenes and vertue, which shee noted him to preferre in all his actions, and nothing hadde shee in more especiall account, then to conserue her chastitie pure and vnsportted. Arnedes was ioyfull to see her beeloned so deere, how shee solowed his hard fortune, and blamed Lecefin as a disloyall Traytoz: which gentle speeches did more comfort his hart, then all the physick or cunning in the world could doe.

While the Emperesse and her Daughters beguiled the time with him, Amenada a woman Dwarfie that attended on Philocrista, & Risdeno her Nephewe, came to Bruquell Arnedes Dwarfie, who vled sundry lamentations, for the great mishappe had befallen his Maister. Amenada comforted him in the best sort shee coulde, saying, that in respect his woundes were not mortal, there was no doubt but he would soone recouer them, and the rather, because the Emperour had giuen such charge of him, as his owne person could not be better attended. Ah, quoth Bruquell, would God it were no worse: then breaking forth a renting sigh, he proceeded in this manner.

Ah my noble Lozde Arnedes, how deere doth her beautie cost thee, for whom thou leste thy Countrey: where the onelie reputation of thine estate, being extracted from such an high and illustrious linage, was sufficient to haue obtayned her, without hazarding thy life in so manie perils and dangers. Amenada mernailing at these words, was immediatlie waapt with a curious desire, to knowe
which

The history of *Palmendos*. 56

which was the knight he named, and therefore she laboured Bruquell wth intreaties: for her Ladie Philocista kne to his Maister to be a knight of *Fraunce*, yet none but the Emperour could tell that he was the Kings Sonne. All things that I can possible (quoth the Dwarfie) will I doo for ye, this onely excepted, which without his command I dare not attempt, because my libertie stretcheth not so far, yet will I promise ye to aske him the question, and if hee bee pleased I will satisfie your desire.

Melicia, who was earnest in affection to knowe moze as concerning her lover Recinde, seeing these *Myrmedons* thus conferring together, and ouer-hearing some of thei^r speeches: after they were departed to their Chambers, she demaunded of Amenada, what talk she had with Arnedes Dwarfie: whereupon she repeated the whole discourse, to the no little content of Philocrista, because thys way she might attayne to moze knowledge of the *French Prince*. And as she heard her say that he left his Country for the loue of a Ladie, shee presumed immediatly her selfe to be the same, for commonly it falles out, that Louers will fauour themselves in semblable iudgments & coniectures: wherefore she commaunded Amenada, to awaite Bruquell for perfo^rmaunce of his promise. The Dwarfie when hee saue conuenient time to talke with his Maister, hee gaue him to vnderstand what had past between him and Amenada, which pleased him so well as nothing could do moze, and commended to him the pursute of this practise. On the morrow, the Emperour and Primaleon dyed together, wherefore Amenada went to finde out Bruquell at hys lodging, and he meeting her by the way, first of all tolde her, that he would perfo^rme the promise he made the daie before: but (quoth he) before I satisfie you herein, I must request one thing of you.

Demaunde hardlie what thou wilt, quoth Amenada, for thy sute beeing honest, thou canst not be denyed. You must promise me then, sayde Bruquell, that to no lying

The history of *Palmendos*.

creature except *Madame Philocrista*, you disclose what I shall reueale vnto you. So is it *Amenada*, that for the loue of her onely, *Arnedes* my honourable Lord and Mayster, eldest Sonne to the King of *Fraunce*, hath forsaken his native Countrey, in that the renowne of her excellent beautie, spredde by fame thowow all those partes, caused him to cutte through the dangerous Seas, to credite with his eyes what his eares were cloyed withall. And hauing at full contemplated her sweete face, he findes, that Nature willing industriously to embellishe this cheefe peece of worke, hath taken all abilitie from humane report, howe curious or eloquent so euer it be, thowowly to accomplyshe the prayse of her merite: wherefore hee hath sent a Courrier to the King his Father, that his Maiestie should send Embassadors hether, to conferre with the Emperour on a marriage betweenc my Mayster and your Ladie, and til they come to dispatche this occasion, he will not be known heerof to anie one, except it be to her gracions selfe onely. Humbly then desire her, with some benigne clemencie to intreate the hart, which her diuine figure hath secretlie rauished and made her thall, so shall she gyue cure to hys woundes, and make him the most fortunate Champion that euer entr'd the fielde for his Ladie: otherwise he can not long enioy his vitall motion, and by his death shall occasion diuers other beside, especially his Cousin *Recinde*, Sonne to the King of *Castile*, who looueth him as his proper life, and as hee bare him company in thys voyage, so wyll he take part of the hardest fortune, for the loue and neere alliaunce that is betweene them.

So well could this tall *Pigme*y vse his language, to gain successe for his Maisters intent, as he made no moze difference betweene the two Princes, in respect of their loyall vnanimitie together: then was betweene the two *Pithagorick* companions, *Orestes* and *Pyllades*, or *Nisus* and *Eurialus*, that woulde one dye for an other. Greatlie did *Amenada* meruaile, hearing that a Prince of so high and great

The history of *Palmendos*. 57

great birth, would adventure thorow such dangerous tra-
uailes, onlie for the accomplishment of a marriage, and
might haue gained it with much lesse labour, wherefore
she thus answered.

In sooth, if I had not promised to acquaint my Ladie
heere with, I durst not for my life discover such waightie
matters, because I cannot tell her the whole discourse, in
that her Sister Melicia is neuer from her, and then shall
she know as much as my Mistresse. That hurteth not, re-
plied Bruquell, neuer conceale it through feare of her pre-
sence, for shee is such a wise and well gouerned Princeesse,
as she will rather modestly hide it, then anie way seeke to
spread it abroad, and will (beside) nothing at all mislike
thereof. This he spake, for that she had her part in the play,
namely by her looue to the Prince Recinde, and if perhaps
Philocrista should be slow or opinitive in her loue, Melicia
happilie would councell her not to refuse so good an offer:
in brieft, that they might reciprocally aduise one another,
as sicke folkes who had surfeited bothe of one disease, and
so oftentimes it comes to passe, that two thoughts afflicted
with one kind of martirdome, receiue together more con-
solation, then they could by anie other that feele not the
like torment.

Bruquell hauing done his endeuour, for the conciliati-
on of Philocrista with his Maister, returned immediatlie
to him, whom he found attending in silent deuotion, to vn-
derstand the issue of this amorous stratageme, and after
that the Dwarfie hadde worde by worde recounted all
his negotiation, Arnedes was rapt into such vnspake-
ble ioy, as hee imagined the howe happy when he mette
with such an ingenious Trucheman. Amenada on the o-
ther side, when she espied time for the purpose, interpre-
ted so well and faithfullie the intent of the Prince to her
Mistresse Philocrista, as she therewith was caried into a
thousande imaginations. And albeit the Knight dispayred
not in his sute, but rather imagined so sweet a countenance

The history of *Palmendos*.

would be inclined to mercie: yet she had so lost her libertie in this cause, by seeing her beloued so dangerously wounded, as now she feared to send him any leuere or rigorous answer, wherefore she thus spake to her Dwarf. I am offended that thou didst promise Bruquell to acquaint mee with these newes, but seeing what hath happened cannot be prevented: thou shalt then goe to Arnedes, and tell him from me, that I meruaile he would thrust himselfe into so manie perils, for which I account my selfe beholding to him, and promise in requitall of his hard sufferings, to accept of him as my loyall Husband, if my gracious parents will so permit it: with this condition, that hee aduenture not the least speeches hereof to me, but hold himselfe satisfied by knowing my will herein. And that I may bee assured of the vehement affection he beareth me, desire him to feede on this answer, as on the most soueraigne Balme or perfect Cataplasme, that may scone of all consolidate his woundes: so hastening his cure and conualescence, that (if it may be) he honour me with his presence to morowe.

After Philocrista had instructed Amenada in her Embassade, she toke Melicia aside, to whom (because they loued eche other with sincere affection) Philocrista discovered this amorous intent, and *Verbatim* reported what the Dwarf had tolde to her: which discourse well contented Melicia, cheefely when she heard that her Knight Recinde was of the royall blood of *Castile*. By this time is Amenada come to the *French* Prince, and hath deliuered the message from Philocrista, wherewith he was so cheerfully animated, as soone after he determined to forsake his bed, but before the Dwarf returned againe. he desired her to conuay a French dittie to her Mistresse, which for her sake he deuised that morning, and withal to intreate the Maister of the Emperours Chappell, to order it in partes after the arte of Musique: the dittie was thus.

The

The history of *Palmendos*. 58

The finest Gold is by the touch discern'd,
The *Adamant* the sturdie yron drawes :
The prooffe heereof in lone may well be learn'd
For by these twaine 7 shape a louters cause.
You *Madame* framed of the finest Golde,
Upon the touchstone of my hart is tryde :
And I compos'd of the yron molde,
Followe the vertues that in you abide.
Then sith the touch telles if the Gold be pure,
And rugged yron shewes the vertuous stone :
Take touch and yron both into your cure,
For (*Madame*) they belong to you alone.

After that *Amenada* had receiued this Dittie, she saide to the Prince, that shee could not tell howe her Mistresse would like of her, bringing her such a presumptuous message : yet if she were displeased therewith, she would disguise every thing so well, as each of them in the ende should receiue contentment. So returning to the Princesse *Philocrista*, she tolde in what extremitie the Prince was for her loue, and to mitigate his passions, had framed that dittie : which when she had read and well noted, shee accounted her conquest greater, then if she were possessed of all *Asia*. Sundry times did the Emperesse and her Daughters visite the French Prince, to the vnspeakeable contentment of the secrete Lovers, who awaited nothing but the coming of the French Embassadors, for the confirmation of their long desired hope : but let vs leaue them a while, and come to *Rifarano*, who is all this while in the searche of *Palmendos*.

82 The history of *Palmendos*.

CHAP. XIX.

How Rifarano beeing in the search of Palmendos, mette with a Dwarfse traailing toward the Emperour, to complayne on the wrong a Knight had doone him, and howe to reuenge the Dwarfse, and gratifye the Emperour heerein, Rifarano went to combat with the Knight before hys Castell.



Three dayes together rode Rifarano, after his departure from Constantinople, without hearing anie tydings of the Knight he sought for, and now in the evening, he mette a Dwarfse on horsebacke, accompanied with foure Squires, of whom hee enquired likewise as concerning the Knight. In sooth, quoth the Dwarfse I saw not any such, but tell me I pray yee from whence you now come. From the Court of the Emperour Palmerin, answered Rifarano. Howe happy then am I, sayd the Dwarfse, to meete you here, because I haue euer more heard, that thence cometh manie good and vertuous Knightes: wherefore I shall pray (in respecte of the good I wishe to so benigne a Prince) that you may soone finde the man you looke for, and likewise that his Maiestie may pittie my cause, in reuenging mee on a Knight that hath shamefullie outraged mee, I giuing him no carse of offence in the world. With these words he gaue a meruelous sigth: whereuppon Rifarano desiring to vnderstande the cause, the Dwarfse thus began. And we gentle Knight, that albeit God hath fashioned me as ye see, yet did hee be-
flow

The history of *Palmendos.* 59

Now on me riches & possessions, and among other thinges, I haue a strong Castell not farre hence, there fel I in loue with a beautifull Damosell, Daughter to a Gentleman my neere neighbour, with whome I dealt in such sorte, as soone after I enioyed her in mariage. Living afterwarde in all prosperous felicitie, wee walked abroad to recreate our selues, in a pleasant field neer adioyning to my house, where this proud and discourteous Knight, (who long laboured to haue my Wife in mariage, and by reason of his euill conditions could not obtayne her) came accompanied with two of his Kinsmen, (as badde disposed men as him selfe) and there tooke my Wife perforce from me, carying her to a Castell of his two dayes iourney hence, where he kepeth her vnder strong garde, and hath sent me worde by one of his Squires, that if I complayne heereof to anye liuing creature, he will come kill me with his owne hands in my Castell. Yet being vnable to endure this villainous oppzession, I am going to tell my cause to the Emperour Palmerin, who I hope will speedilie doe me iustice herein, being a Prince thereto greatlie addicted as I haue heard report.

Rifarano meruailing at this horrible iniurie, sayde to the Dwarfie. Shewe me the Castell where the Knight abideth, for I doubt not but to do so much in the right of thy cause, as he shall yelde recompence for this faulte, & feare heereafter to offer any one the like, without any further troubling the Emperour heerein. The Dwarfie accepting this frendlie offer, that night lodged Rifarano at his Castell, where hee was exceeding well entertained, and on the morrow, taking five Squires with them, rode to the Knights Castell, where espying one vpon the walles, Rifarano demaunded if his Lorde were within. Mary is he, answered the Squire on the walles, hee is nowe sporting himselfe with that tall fellows loue: but I am sorie that you would be so badlie counselled, quoth he to Rifarano, as to come ende your life in this place. Be not thou so careful

The history of *Palmendos*.

for me, answered Rifarano, but goe lette thy Maister vnderstand that I woulde speake two or thre wordes wth him, on matters that greatlie concerne his honour. The Squire went presentlie to his Maister, who hearing that the Dwarfie had brought a Knight with him, tooke the Gentlewoman by the hande, and brought her with him to a window, where opening the Casements y they might see her, said.

Knight that didst call me hether, say boldly what thou canst, for I wel perceine thou comnest to seeke thine own ruine. And there didst thou finde thy dishonour, answered Rifarano, when by force and treason thou abusedst thys Gentleman, who neuer gaue thee any cause of offence: wherefore restore his Wife whome thou vniustlie detainest, or if reason may not thereto perswade thee, come downe and enter the Combat with me, and I shall let thee know the price of thy villainie. I had not thought, replied the Knight of the Castell, that thy indiscretion had beene so grent, as to thinke I would win a thing so hardlie, and deliuer it from me so lightlie, nor shall the paragon of my hart, bee in the custodie againe of so base an excrement of nature: then spake he to the Dwarfie in this manner.

Thou wretched and ridiculous creature, comnest thou likewise to make one in the Tragedie? begin with thyne owne hand thou wert best, or I shall plague thee with extreme torments. So tooke he the Gentlewoman in his armes, and oftentimes laciuously kissed her, shee stryuing in teares to hinder his embracings, wherefore hee sayde. Good Madame, seeke no occasion whereby to offende your selfe, for yee shall see me plucke downe the brauery of this Knight, and make y Maister your husbände safe frō troubling you anie moze. Tush, these are but wordes, quoth Rifarano, let me see thee come Armed into the fielde, then shall I lue in hope of some deeds. And if y wilt haue me imagine thee couragious, bring down the Ladie with thee, that the Conquerer may carrie her whether him pleaseth.

The history of *Palmendos*. 60

I am content, answered the Knight, because thou shalt see howe little I esteeme thy threatning, and soone shall all controuersies be ended betweene thee and me, that heere after may arise on this occasion. Quickly had he Armed himselfe and came forth leading the Lady in his hande: which when the Dwarfie saw, he durst not tary, but gotte him a bowe shote further off. So fell the Knight and Rifarano to the Combat, which continued long time doubtfull on eyther side, but at length Rifarano had the vpper hand of his enemie, because he had giuen him many cruell woundes on his bodie. When the Squires of the Castell sawe their Maister overcome, they woulde forcibly haue caried the Ladie into the Castell again: but Rifarano aduertised thereof by her cry, made them forsake her & runne hastily into the Castell, then taking her by the hand, sayd. Come with me Ladie, and I shall deliuer ye to your Husbande that loues yee loyallie, as you may be perswaded by this I haue doone at his earnest intreatie. Many humble thanks she requited him withal, seeing her selfe free from her iniurious enemie, and the Dwarfie seeing this fortunate successe, came and humbled himselfe at the Conquerers feete, embracing his Wife in aboundaunce of ioy, being neither of them able to expresse theyr contentation, for that teares and inward motions of comfort had depriued them of speech. Afterward the Knight had recovered himselfe againe, and came stealing on Rifarano thinking to murder him, but the Dwarfie espying him, cryed out, whereupon the Prince returned, and getting him once more into subiection, with his Sworde smote hys heade from his Shoulders. The Dwarfie not a little ioyfull for this victorie, desired the Prince that he would accompany him to his Castell, because that trayterous Knight had a Brother and two Cousins, who hearing of his death, wold presently pursue them. Whereto Rifarano courteously condescended, and mounting the Gentlewoman behind her Husbande, they iourneyed thence with all speede possible.

The history of *Palmendos*.

But ere they could recouer the place where they wold be, they were pursued by the Knights Brother and his two Cozins. When the Dwarfie and his Wife nowe verilie thought to die: notwithstanding, such was the braue behaviour of Rifarano, that one after another they spedde as the Knight of the Castell had done, and so without any more interruption they gotte home to their Castell, where they feasted the Prince very sumptuously. On the morow he departed thence, continuing his trauayle after Palmendos, and by the way he succoured a distressed Countesse, against a cruell Brother in Lawe of hers, named Diolo, who sought forcibly to depyue her of her possessions: but by the rare Chiuallrie of Rifarano, hee lost his life in that bad attempt. And here wpth the Countesse we will leaue Rifarano, because wee haue too long forgotten our cheefe Knight Palmendos.

CHAP. XX.

Howe Palmendos arrived in the Isle of Carderia, where first he vanquished Tyrendos in the Ioust, and next the Knight that guarded the passage of the Bridge, and also dyuers other that assailed him at the thyrde Tower, and howe he came to the Gardengate where Francelina was.



At long since you vnderstoode, how after Palmendos had vanquished Arnedes, hee followed his way with long desire to see Carderia, wherfore omitting all occasions that might hinder his voyage, he determined to make no stay till he came to the Isle: and very soone after it was his chaunce

The history of *Palmendos*. 61

chance to arrive there, whē he implored the helpe of hea-
uen in finishing this adventure, and as a sacrifice after
victorie, he promised to offer his soule to the holy caracer
of Christianitie, and to be baptized so soone as he could. At
this time Belcar kept not the passage of the Bridge, be-
cause he was departed certaine daies before, to visite the
king and Queene at *Macedon*: for they hearing of his
wonderfull deedes of Armes, in defending that Bridge,
sent for him to the Courte by an expresse messenger. And
truelie he woulde not haue gone (so resolute was he in his
enterprize) but that the Princesse Alderina secretly com-
maunded him, by a Letter written with her owne handes:
she hauing discovered the trueth of all to the Quēne Gri-
ana, intreating her by some meanes to continue the Duke
her Father there, till time that Belcar came from the Isle
of *Carderia*.

The Quēne liked heereof exceeding well, and know-
ing her Nephewe could not ioyne in more honourable ma-
riage, then with the chaste and vertuous Ladie Alderina:
she conferred with the Duke and Duchesse of *Pontus*, who
likewise were glad of so noble alliaunce. For this cause the
Quēne sent one of her Gentlemen to Belcar, accompani-
ed with Alderinaes Page, who closely deliuered h^e Prince
the Letter, the substance whereof followeth thus.

Q. 1.

The

The history of *Palmendos*.

The Letter sent by the Princesse of Durace, to Belcar Sonne to the King of Hungarie.

To the right valiant and renowned Prince Belcar, Sonne to the King of *Hungarie*: a Maiden very easie to be deceiued, sendeth health condigne to his deserts.



Excuse mee, Lord Belcar, if I write to you what the aboundaunce of my spirite enforceth, because if it were of anie thing els, I feare I could not ende, without confused wandring in this discourse: so extraoꝝdinarily are my senses here in perplered, as they can enioy no little breathing time of rest or quiet. And if you woulde exactly consider, from whence this molestation proceedeth, you should finde the grounde thereof to be violent and excessive loue, which on my behalfe was faithfully entertained, and dedicated to none but onely you: a reason to procure this Letter the more fauourable entertainment, and to bee reade with as good will as it was written. Knowe then, that I doo not without greate occasion silently complaine of you, because me thinkes you seeme a promise breaker, or rather a peruariatour in loue towarde mee: as the reading of this Letter will cause yee to confesse, if that reason bee not alienated from your iudgement, which ought to direct your compasse in all affayres.

What thinke yee will now be the bulgare opinion of your attempt: nothing but that you desire to haue y name of *Francelinaes* true Champion, considering y inuicible exploits in Armes, which daillie you persourne in her defence: making hereby y renowne of her excellencie more memorabile, & all Gentlemen more desirous to visite that

Ile.

The history of *Palmendos*. 62

Ille. Wherefore I now perceiue you are not my Knight, but rather that your seruice is due to the faire Princeesse *Francelina*, which induceth mee to beleene, that the speeches vsed on your behalfe, when you departed from the Journey at *Macedon*, were meere forgerie and dissimulation: an ade sufficient wheron to rayse condemnation (vnlesse I speedilie perceiue the contrarie) and to repute you the most disloyall Prince, y^euer made profession of manhoode. But to preuent this perswasion, (whereto comon speche by your absence hasteneth me) and that it may not bee resolute sette downe in my minde: I pray you come hether with what speede you canne, befoze my departure hence to *Durace*, that I may apply some remedie to y^e continuall martirdome, which in looues vnquenchable fyre my hart suffereth by your occasion. Els sende mee worde suddainly what is your intent, as concerning the p^rincipall poynts dilated, and by no other Messenger then this bearer, whom I charge with some speeches by word of mouth: him you may boldly trust and acquaint with your secrets, as the most faithfull messenger I could deuise to sende.

*The Lady knowne to you, whose death is neere at hand:
If pittie cause ye not to come, the perrill to withstand.*

This Letter and other matters of credence, wherewith *Alderina* right well instructed *Gracian*, were the onely meanes that the Prince *Belcar* came to *Macedon*, who left *Tirendos* (in meane while) defender of the Bridge at *Carderia*, hoping to returne thether againe very shortly: but other matters happened vnto him which excused that labour, according as you shall reade heereafter.

Nowe come we to the Prince of *Tharsus*, whom *Tirendos* perceiuing to appoche the Bridge, came and denied him passage according to y^e order: wherupon they fel to the Joust, *Tirendos* fortune p^rouing so badde, as hee was sent to measure his length on the ground, wherat the

A. 2,

behol,

The history of *Palmendos*.

the beholders were greatly amazed, for that since the departure of Belcar, he had prevailed against many a knight. Among the rest, the Queene of *Theffalie* Mother to *Francelina*, who was come thither five or six dayes before, because the last of the three fayres that caused y^e enchantment in the foytresse, foreseeing shee coulde not live long, hastened the coming of *Palmendos*, as you have heard before, and after ward sent word to the Queene, that some after her death she should see her desires accomplished.

The death of the Enchauntresse was no sooner known to the good Queene, (who had an extreame affection to see her Daughter free from the Magickall contritions, that thereby the King her Husbande might be delivered, from cruell servitude among y^e Heathen) but she departed from *Theffalie*, and came to the Ile of *Carderia*, where shee, nor any of hers could passe further then the Bridge: wherefore they erected Tents and Pavillions in the fiede, attending there the end of the adventure, when shee seeing that *Tyrendos* was vanquished, wished such successe to y^e new come knight, as hee might happilie finish the enchantment.

Palmendos perceiuing how his first aduersarie would trouble him no further, approached to the Gates of the first Tower, where he behelde the great knight ready to offer him battaile, wherefore hee alighted from his Horse, and drawing his sword, saide. If the providence of the heavens have bestowed me to conquer this enterprise, far be all pusillanimitie and cowardise from me, till I have delivered the gentle Princesse heere enclosed: so beare then mine eyes as yet to covet the sight of *Francelina*, albeit yee burne in desire to beholde her, and I will keepe promise with yee so soone as fortune pleaseth.

After these words, hee closely buckled with the knight of the Bridge, continuing a long, dangerous and doubtfull combatte with him, the Dwarfie in the Lanthorne sundry times with his Horne renewing his Champions forces:

The history of *Palmendos*. 63

forces: yet by the man of invincible courage, who was ordained to be his Conquerer, hee was confounded amongst all his devillish helps. So forthwarde hee marched to the seconde Tower, and as the Gates were clapping together, according as they did to the Prince Belcar, hee thruste his Sworde betwene the Gates, when immediatly the thunder ceased, and they fell backe wide open as they were before.

At this good happe the beholders greatly reioyced, especially the Ducene of *Thessalie*, who followed on Ayll accompanied with Ozalio, and to him she highly commended the worthy behaviour of this Knight: Ozalio answering her, that she had good cause to applaude her stars, having sent thither a Knight of such royal descent, as his like was not to be founde throughout all Christian kingdoms. Tiredos in this while was caried into his Tent by his Squires, where he so grieved for his disgrace, as hee was readie to die in despyght thereof. Now is Palmendos come to the last Tower, which was defended by three Knights armed *cap a pe*, and they with three sharpe Lances stood readie to receive him at the poynt, wherewith hee being somewhat amazed, said to himselfe. Wheron thinkest thou Palmendos? what? beginnest thou now to dismay? tusthe man be of good cheere, thou labourst for her, with whose beautie none in the worlde may compare: if by coming so farre thou hast done more, then any Knight before thee could performe, commit thy selfe to God and Fortune for the rest, and followe thine intent though thou die therein. Nowe begins he courageously to adventure on them, who ioyning altogether against him, overthrew him that hee could hardly arise againe, notwithstanding recovering his feete, hee pursued with such unconquerable hope, as at length he drove them before him over the Bridge, when bothe they and the first Knight of the Tower vanished away together, and in like manner did the Dwarfie that late in the Lanthorne, with a horrible shaking of the earth

The history of *Palmendos*.

and the whole *Foxtresse*. The *Quene*, *Ozario* & the rest, fell downe and honoured heauen for this victorie, perswading theselues that the worst of the aduenture was past: as for the *Prince* himselfe, hee followed the matter with such alacritie, considering faire *Francelina* was the reward of his trauaile, as nothing seemed to him nowe impossible. So passing on, he found the posterne that guided the waie to the Garden, which was garded by two furious enchanted dogges, there thzough the wickette he beheld a fountaine, with sundry goodly *Dairoselles* about it, and in the midst, in a curious Chayze of clothe of Golde, sate *Francelina* the sweete Goddess of beautie, so wonderfull gloriouslie decked in rich ornaments, as it would haue made any hart enamoured to beholde her. *Palmendos* raniſhed with the sight of her, ſtept in at the dore not dreadding any perrill, when presentlie the enchanted dogs ranne vpon him, as though they would haue rent him in peeces, and long time very dangerously they did assaile him, tearing his Armour cruelly in peeces, that he was now dzyuen to dispaire of his life: yet in the ende with much a doe he preuailed against them, albeit they brought him into exceeding great perplexitie, as hee neuer felt the like in all his life befoze.

CHAP.

The history of *Palmendos*. 64

CHAP. XXI.

What gentle speeches and gracious deuises, Palmendos had with faire Francelina in the Garden, wher they supped together : and howe after hee had tolde her what he was, he gaue her the Ring, which he receiued of the Queene his mother at his departure from Tharsus.



Rancelina alreadie had felte the flames of looue, in as belement manner as the Prince Palmendos, because the Fairies (knowing the end of y^e enchantment was at hand) told her that ere long shee should be conquered, and deliuered from that Castell by one of y^e best Knights in the world, shee beeing at her byrth

appointed his Wife, in recompence of his aduenturous trauayles.

And this discoruse shee sealed with so many rare commendations of the Knight, as her hart was surprized with loue in such sort, y^e shee longed every howze to see the man appointed for her Husbände. And as the Pilot long perplexed with outrageous tempests, mounts to the toppe to see if any Haucn for reske we is at hande: so this Lady tossed to and fro in the rough bilowes of looue, oftentimes left her Dungeon and came vpon the walles, expecting the conning of this promised Knight. By good hap she espyed when Palmendos came to the Bridge, beside, the trembling of the Castell at the departure of the Knights, touched her hart with a signe of present comfort, whereupon in this branery shee went with her Damoselles into the Garden, expecting the issue of the Knights fortune that

The history of *Palmendos*.

presaged so much before hand. In breefe, he being entred the Garden, as you haue heard already, she being directed by the Fairies what she should doe, when she perceiued the dogges ouercome: arose with her Damoselles & went towards the Knight, shewing many gracious countenances for his welcome, but Palmendos seeing her approche so nere him, fel on his knee offering to kisse her hand, whereat *Francelina* bashfullie blushing, offered him the like, saying.

It is my dutie, Sir Knight, to vse such humilitie, albeit your courtesie hath preuented me, for this wonderfull aduenture finished by you, declares your rare perfection in Chualrie, being second to none that at this day beareth Armes. Yet ere you take me hence, I would request one fauour at your handes, not any thing to make you doubt the losse of her, who freely giueth herselfe as your owne, but for you haue deliuered me from the enchantment, my request graunted, you may dispose of me as your loyall spouse and Wife. *Madame* answered, *Palmendos*, I now thinke my selfe no lesse beloued of heauen, then fauoured by Fortune, hearing you say that I am yours, and you are mine, which makes mee thinke all my labours nothing in respect of you: therefore demaunde what you please, for I being your professed seruant, must with all reuerence obey your commaunde. A thousande thanks good Knight, quoth she, albeit such speeches agree not with your calling, I being onely in your subiection, and ready to attend as your hand-mayden: but me thinkes it were necessarie you should take a little rest, being good to regard the ende and periode of all thinges, let me therfore humbly intreate yee, to come refresh your selfe for the better conseruation of your health. So went they both together to the fountaine, where *Palmendos* was vnarmed by *Princess* *Francelina* and her Damoselles, and a costly Mantle was brought to wrap about him, then sate he down by his Ladie, in another Chayze couered all ouer with Gold, and
as

The history of *Palmendos*. 65

as if Hercebus had sent his Daughter to hide the day light, spreading darke night all ouer the Hemisphere, so were great store of Torches and Tapers alighted. There was felt the odoriferous smell of Roses, Violets, & al the sweet flowers of the Garden, beside the incomparable beauty of Francelina, her Maydens beguiled the time with sundry sorts of Instrumentes, and thereto sung many dainty canzonets, as if Apollo, Orpheus, Arion, and all the other fathers of heauenly Musique had bene present, which so attracted the senses of the Prince, as his memory began to were drowsie and forgetful, imagining himselfe in a very beatitude, where he seemed to see, not onely a perfect beautie of a Goddess, but a diuine shadow, which carried atrace both his hart and eyes in contemplation.

Of like opinion was the young Princess, meruailing at the braue constitution of her Knight, and esteeming herselfe beyond all other in happines, that Fortune had sorted her out such a Husband: and in sooth these Louers were the fayrest couple that euer were ioyned in mariage together, not vnjustly compared to Leander and Hero, the two goodliest starres that were in their times. In this surpassing contentation they continued, till a Damosell (vnderstanding that supper was prepared) there set befoze them a Table readie couered, the wood whereof was very precious, deliuering a saour much like to Balme, and thereon was sette all sorts of costly viands: hard by stood a Cupboorde richlie adozned with Basons and Cups of Golde, which were embellished with such precious stones, as the value of them was reputed inestimable. But these louers coulde eate verie little, because they had worke enough to regard eche other: for there is nothing in the worlde moze agreeable to one enamoured, then to contemplate the object of his thoughts, because loue making a breach into the bodie, and planting his siege against the very soule, hinders the passage of nourishing meates, and makes them feed on his lonely deuises, which are such, as euery one of you that

The history of *Palmendos*.

hane tasted thereof, can distinguish whether they be bitter or sweet: Hence proceedeth the pleasure conceived by beholding, when the eye takes his course to the hart, carrying with it the liuelie draught and effigies of the thing seene, making so sound impression therof in the spirit, as nothing els may be represented thereto: in the end, this Idea passing through the penetrailes & secret rayons of the stomach, engraves on the hart the perfect portraict of the thing beloved. And what morsel more delicious, what wine more pleasant, or licquor more ambrosius can one find, wherewith to satisfy the soule espoused with the bbandon of Venus, then the exact contemplation and secret discourse, which the spirit maketh to his onlie choise, when he beholdeth himselfe reciprocally beloved of her whom hee loueth: doubtles none at al: happily some other might be spoken of, which seeme to yeeld more content, but then they are transitory & of no continuance. In this sort supped *Palmendos* & *Francelina*, when the Damosels withdrawing the Table, went to take their own refection, leaving these twaine to deuise together: then appoaching the knight to the Mistres of his hart, said. Madame, how happy may I name the holwe of my natiuity, seeing the celestiaall bodies appointed me such a planet, as made me gaine the honoz of your loue: now find I that for truth which you told me in the Temple at *Delphos*, in short time I should see you at mine own pleasure. Command then I beseech you what you would haue mee do, and shew me the way to gather some fruit, by the perpetual service I haue vowed to your diuine beauty, that I may giue some cooling to the vnquenchable flame, wherin my hart is more & more tormented. And if the artificiall fire which we receiue betwixt between two stones for our vse, is lesse then nothing in respecte of the naturall, as namelie the most noble of the foure elements lodged nere the celestiaall region: I dare, and by experience can affirme, that the violence of the diuine, surpasseth the action of any other two, because if they light on any body, they may quickly be extinguished:

The history of *Palmendos*. 66

tinguished: but much more contrary is the other, the vehemence wherof every way increaseth paine, without y^emitting the life of the sufferer, as the very least of y^e other doth. My Lord, answered Francelina, in regarde of the fire which happily you now feele, esteeme the same to procede from the spark, that equally hath taken hold on me, wherof I make no such admiration (considering the disposition of the destientes) as to heare you say y^e you haue seene mee in an other place: in sooth at y^e age of thre^e yeeres I was fatally enclosed in this Castell, where neuer since entred knight or anie other straunger, but onely you. As for my request whereto you haue promised, thus it is, that you attempt not against my chastitie, untill our marriage be solemnly performed, which may not be, til you first haue rescued the king of *Thessalie* my father, from the long imprisonment wherein the Turke hath kept him. This aduventure you must needs undertake, which doubtles yee shal l^e worthilie effect, and so be Lord of me and the Realme of *Thessalie*, wherto I am lawfull heire after my fathers decease: for performanc^e wherof, I commit my selfe into your custody, provided you keepe your former promise. *Palmendos* attentively noted her words, and afterwarde remained a while silent, imagining whether he should send or accompanie his Ladie to the Empero^r, or in meane space keepe himselfe unknowne to anie, till he had ended the aduventure in *Turkie*, bringing at his returne the king of *Thessalie* with him, if the heauens fauoured him in his deliuerance, at length breaking off this silent determination, he answered in this sort. Madame, so feruent and irreparable is the loue I beare y^e, as to gaine the Monarchie of the whole world, I woulde not offende the very least of your vertuous thoughtes: and albeit I had not promised what you required, mine own regard shoulde haue taught me better gouernment. For I account my selfe the happiest knight vnder heauen, not by anie honour or prayse gotten in this aduventure, but onely to see my selfe subiect

The history of *Palmendos*.

to such incomparable beautie, which henceforth shall make me so forward in Chivalrie, as the race from whence I am descended, shall thereby atchaine eternall commendation. And heereof Madame resolve your selfe, that paine or travaile shall not withhold mee, from restoring the King your Father to his pristine libertie, if my wanted fortunate Starre shine on me in the action. In meane while I will leaue you to the Emperours charge, the Prince whom I loue and desire to serue, bearing patiently & burden of my greefe in your absence, till time allow vs a gracious meeting. Be heereof assured my noble Leide, quoth she, that neuer shall I loue anie but you, to whom the fatall destinies haue onely appointed me, and nolesse wyl my torments be in your absence, then yours, being nowe depriued of my former libertie, and the same transferred to your disposing.

Spending the time thus in amorous conference, at length he told her al that happened to him in the Temple at *Delphos*, where if he sawe her not in person, yet did hee behold her liuely representation, and had a great deale of talke with her: whereat *Francelina* coulde not but meruaile, yet commending the wisdom of the *Pyrrics* in appointing her so noble a husband. Now she desires to vnderstand his name and birth, where with at large hee truelie acquainted her, yet willing her she should not reueale it to anie, till he returned with the King of *Thessalie* her father. Then did he giue her the Ring, which hee receined of the Queene his Mother when he came from *Tharsus*, requesting her to keepe it carefully, because hee must shewe it to the Emperour his Father, as the token whereby he should discerns him to be his Sonne.

CHAP.

The history of *Palmendos.* 67

CHAP. XXII.

Howe Palmendos and Francelina going to the Queene of Theſſalie, mette without the Caſteldyuers Knights and Ladies of the Iſle, which attended theyr comming: what reucrence the Lord of the Iſle did him, and how he brought the Queene to ſee the Caſtell.



Ighlie pleaſed was the Princeſſe Francelina, whē ſhe knewe her ſpouſe to bee ſonne to the Emperoꝝ Palmerin, and al this night they bequiled þ time with ſundꝛe diſcourſes pleaſing to them both. The next moꝛning, the Princeſſe brought her loue to beholde her ſtately lodging, where ſhe cauſed him to put on

a coſtly blacke Armour, left there by the Fairies purpoſe, lie foꝝ him, as alſo a goodly ſwoꝝd, by vertue whereof hee might bꝛing ſuch as him pleaſed into a ſound ſleepe, ſo cauſing two Damoſels to beare his Helmet and Launce, they intended to walke ſwoꝛth of the Caſtell. Nowe ſhined faire Francelina bꝛighter then the moꝛning ſtarre, her heade attire adoꝛned all ouer with Carbuncles, Diamendes, Rubies, Emeraldes and Orientall Saphires, and her vpper garment beeing a long Robe of cloth of Golde, curiouſlie figured with pearles and pꝛecious ſtones, as the vaſtue thereof was imagined ineſtimable. In this, and far greater pompe then I can ſette downe, they left the Caſtell, meeting by the way ſundꝛy Knights & Ladies of the Iſle, and among them all was an auncient graue Gentleman, Father to the thꝛee Fairies, whom they inueſted in the gouernment of this Iſle after their death, he falling on his

K. 3.

knee

The history of *Palmendos*.

knée befoze *Palmendos* and *Francelina*, deliuered these speeches. Aduenturous and most fortunate Knight, happie was the Planet that ruled at thy birth, seeing that by thy vertue and wonderful prowesse, thou hast made this place accessible, which so long time hath continued full of trouble. Reuerend Sir, answered *Palmendos*, the soueraigne bountie hath made mee the instrument of your good, and therfore I reioyce a great deale the more: if you be either Father, Uncle, or allied to those noble Dames, that by their knowledge haue done so much for me, I giue yee all the right heere to bee had by the conquest of *Francelina*. I humbly thank ye Sir, answered the Knight of the Isle, for offering me such a courtous gift, wherof I am altogether vnwoorthie, albeit my Daughters by their secrete Philosophie, in this action still directed your course: but leaue we these speeches till better opportunitie, and goe we to comfort the Queene of *Thessalie*, who on the Bridge attendeth your coming, for till you haue brought her Daughter ouer the Bridge, the enchauntments are not ended, & then shall the Castell be in the former state, as it was when *Francelina* came first hither. And is my gracious Queene and Mother heere? said the Princesse, then I see my ioyes will meete altogether. So walked they louinglie ouer the Bridge, attended on by manie Lordes, Barons & Ladies, when the Queene seeing her Daughter come towarde her, hardly could she refraine from swooning in the armes of *Ozario*, who was likewise readie to doe as much at the ioyfull sight of his freende *Palmendos*, yet at length shee embraced her Daughter, saying.

What aboundaunce of teares haue issued from myne eyes, since the time I sawe my beloued Daughter? Howe many bitter anguishes of hart haue I endured, and breathed innumerable sighes and clamours into the ayre, for the absence of thee and the King thy Father, every houre expecting the release of you both from imprisonment: how yskome is the remembraunce (O perfect substance of mine

The history of *Palmendos*. 68

mine entrayles) that I was a Mother so cruel and severe, to banish thee so long time from me: but heerein I consented to the perswasion of the Fairies, who promised that by thine imprisonment, I should recover the King my Husband out of thraldome, it now remaineth whether they words will sort to effect or no. Wherfore Sir Knight, seeing you haue eralted the soule that lay dispayning in the floods of extremitie, by deliuering my daughter frō these Magicall charmes: let me intreate thee to follow thy fortune, and accomplishe all my ioyes together, in restoring him for whom this sorcerie was inuented, that the remainder of our life may be more happy, then it hath bene since the time we met first together. Palmendos sorrowing to see the Queene thus lament, encouraged her in this sort: Good Madame torment not your selfe with any further greefe, seeing I haue determined to lose my life, or els to bring with me the King of *Thessalie*, in meane space allwaie your sorowes by the presence of your daughter, whom the heauens haue allotted to be my Wife, and thereby confirmed you my gracious Mother. By this time the Knight of the Isle had made such provision in the Castell, as they might there lodge according to their content, because more conuenient place there was not neere at hande, and there thre daies they sported themselves in pleasure, meruailing at the ingenious deuises there framed by the Fairies, so that the Castell seemed as a terrestriall Paradise. Which Palmendos perceiuing, and that it was seated in a sweet and fertile climat, he intended to sende for people of his owne native Countrey, where by it might be the better inhabited, and because some memory of him and Francelina, might be reserved to following posterities.

The Knight of the Isle feasted them very royallie, and nothing was wanting that any way might delight them, when Palmendos falling in conference with the Queene, desired that she would accompany her Daughter to *Constantinople*, there to stay with her in the Emperors Courte
as

The history of *Palmendos*.

as sent from him : and that she should moreover assure his Maiestie, that hee hauing finished his voyage into *Turkie*, would no longer conceale himselfe as he had done. My noble Doone, quoth the Queene, I shall willingly performe what ye haue appointed, but I would know if you meane to take any strength with you against the *Turke*, because I would sende for ayde to *Thessalie*, and beside craue assistance of the Emperour, who I am sure will succour mee with all his legions. Gracious Madame and mother, answered *Palmendos*, I wil take no other company with mee then I brought hether, for such busines must be doone rather by aduenturous hazarde, then by bringing forces into the fieldes : so that were yours and all the Emperours united together, yet shoulde wee neuer compasse our intent that way. But you shall vnderstande that I being on the Sea not long since, met with the King of *Culagui*, donne in lawe to the great *Turke*, as hee coasted along *Thrace* with his Rowers and Pirats, onely to endamage the Empire so farre as he might : yet by good happe I tooke him prisoner, and sent him to his Maiestie at *Constantinople*. If happilie by secrete subtiltie I cannot preuaile, I shall moue an erchaunge of these two Kings, cullouring the matter with manie plausible reasons : in breese, I will do as the occurrences shall best aduise me, wherein I hope the diuine bountie will direct mee the best course, that I may compasse the issue of mine affectionate desire. The Queene reioyced verie much, when she heard that y King of *Culagui* was likewise prisoner, and hoping to haue her Husband in erchaunge for him, she more dilligentlie hastened the departure of *Palmendos*, the like (though lothe to leaue his companie so soone) did faire *Francelina*, not doubting but her Lord and Husband would soone returne, and knit vp all their ioyes with the presence of the King her Father.

CHAP.

The history of Palmendos. 69

CHAP. XXIII.

Howe the Queene of Theſſalie and Francelina her Daughter, departing from the Iſle of Carderia, were accompanied on the way by Palmendos & Ozalio, when taking theyr leave each of other, the Queene and her Daughter rode to the Emperours Court, where they were very graciously entertained.



Lovers are these Lovers to part a ſunder, but the cauſes being vrgent, they are conſtrained to make a vertue of neceſſitie: wherefore taking their leave of the Knight of the Iſle, as alſo of all the Lords & Barons that ſo friendly bare them company all this while, after many amorous and ceremonious courteſies, accompanied with ſighes, teares and ſorrowfull looks, and they had brought them halfe a dayes iourney on the waie, Palmendos and Ozalio rode toward the ſeaſide, where they had left order that their Shippe ſhould meete them. The Queene and her Daughter, without any trouble to hinder their iourney, arrived at the Cittie of Conſtantinople, ſending one of her Knightes to the Emperour to let him vnderſtande the cauſe of her coming, as alſo the diſcourſe of all that had happened. The Knight diſcharging his dutie as he was commanded, his Maieſtie requested to know his name, who had ſo fortunatly deliuered Francelina. Dread Lord, answered the Meſſenger, hee is called Palmendos, the moſt valiant and courteous Knight in all theſe parts of the worlde. Much good haue I heard of the man, ſaid the Emperour, but cometh he now

The history of *Palmendos*.

in company with the Queene? So my Lorde, replied the Knight, because the future deliuerance of our King, hath procured his iourney into *Turkie*. Then the Empero^r commaunded Primaleon and his Barons, to goe accompanie the Queene and her Daughter to the Court, which they with all diligence performed, so that the same & renowne spread of her thow all those regions, encreased their desire to behold her. Arnedes likewise would haue gone with them, but that as yet he was not perfectlie recovered, and beside hee wered dailie verie melanchollie, seeing the Embassadours of *Fraunce* staied so long, no^r could he heare anie tyding of his Cozin Recinde The Queene of *Theffalie*, and her Ladies came attired in mourning blacke, exp^{re}ssing her sorow for the King her Husband: but Francelina like glorious Cynthia in her cheefest pride, clothed (as you haue heard) in most statelie ornaments, drew euery eye to admire her beautie. Primaleon hauing saluted the Queene, gaue her place and rode with the Princesse her Daughter, when caried alwaie in conceit with her surpassing feature, he entred into these speeches. Hee thinkes (*Madame*) the Fairies were ouermuch iniurious, to locke vpp in prison such admirable beautie, in that anie gentle hart beholding you, would the soner adventure for the King your father, hauing such a gracious reward set downe for his trauaile: wherefore Palmendos hath good occasion to boast, if fortune permitte him to deliuer the King of *Theffalie*. And I, quoth Francelina, account my happines nothing inferiour, gaining hereby the most valiant and debonaire Knight, that euer enterprised actions of Chualrie, which makes mee esteeme the Fairies wise and discret, by enclosing me in the enchanted Castell: for verie few wold haue thrust their liues in perrill hauing once seene me, where contrariwise to get hono^r by the aduenture, they made proufe of that which was onely destenied for Palmendos, hee being the man that iustly may be called the flower of Knights. In this matter I will not contende with yee, answered Primaleon,

The history of *Palmendos*. 70

Primalcon, for the vertues and graces of your beloved is such, as no man may woorthilie bee compared with him, wherefore you haue good reason to affect him: and he likewise is bounde to constant permanencie, if your diuine lookes haue peirced his hart as they ought. The Emperour and the Emperesse, with Philocrista and their other daughters, came to the Pallace gate to welcom y^e Quēn, when shee and her Daughter alighting from their Palafrases, with humble reuerence saluted his Maiestie, who with his Emperesse honourably entertained them, conducting them into the great Hall, where the Quēne began in this manner.

Most mightie and invincible Monarche, Palmendos the onelie Jewell of knight-hood, by vs kisseth the hande of your imperiall Maiestie, hauing sent yee this young Princeesse, to be kept vnder your protection, till he returne from *Turkie*, with my espoused Lord the King of *Thessalie*, if Fortune graunt his deliuerance from the cruell Infidels, for which I continue in hourly deuotion, as wel for the great desire I haue to see the King my Husband, as also to see the Knights speedie returne, who onely dedicateth his trauailes to your highnes seruice. With these wordes she deliuered her Daughter to his Maiestie, and the Emperour receiuing her very graciously, shewed himselfe exceeding ioyfull for their arriual, desiring them to vse his Court as their owne, and to be as frollike there as if they were in *Thessalie*. Beside, hee prayed God so to direct Palmendos in his attempt, as hee might deliuer the King her Husband from captiuitie: withal, that if he had requested assistance in the cause, he shoulde haue had his Maiesties power at commaund, then taking *Francelina* by the hand, he said. To you Daughter *Philocrista*, I committe the honourable charge of this young Princeesse, vntill such time her Knight be returned. My Lord, answered *Philocrista*, I shall right willinglie fulfill your commaundement, being no lesse glad of such a companion, then to haue y^e Ladie

The history of *Palmendos*.

present with me, for whom such rare deedes of Chivalrie haue bene performed. The Emperesse took the Queen by the hande, and Philocrista her charge Francelina, they all sitting downe vnder a sumptuous Canapie, where the Knights regarding them, especially the Emperesse and the two Princesses, imagined a second iudgement for the Apple of beautie. And admit we Arnedes for y^e gentle shepeheard Paris, yet hee imagined his Philocrista to bee most perfect, although Francelina was very farre beyonde her, al the Knights concluding, that they had neuer sene moze choyle beautie, except the Emperesse when shee was in the flower of her youth. But Philocrista neuer attained her Mothers perfections, albeit shee had two Sisters named Florida and Bazilia, (which by the Autho^r of Palmerin are named Belisa and Melicia,) that came verie nere her in resemblaunce, especiallie Florida, of whom we shall haue occasion to speake heereafter, when wee come to the noble Prince Edward of *England*.

The Emperour intricated Francelina, to tell him (if he coude) of whence *Palmendos* was, whereto the Princessesse modestlie thus answered. Dreade Lord, I can reueale no further of him, then that hee is commaunder of a Kingdome, & diuers other Signories of great estate: what els I knowe of him, I am to be excused till his comming, when himselfe will manifest his Countrey and originall, not his valour & courtesie, so: that is blazed throug moste partes of the world. For this discreet aunswere, shee was greatly commended by the Emperour, who noting her comelic gestures and behauiour, esteemed her discrete and well aduised: and seeing the Ring on her finger that *Palmendos* gaue her, he thought it very much resembled hys owne Ring, which the Queene of *Tharsus* gaue him at his departure. Now coude hee not containe himselfe, but demaunds of her, of whom she had that costly Jewell, so like one that he held in great estimation. She answered that *Palmendos* gaue it her, after her deliuerance fro the Isle
of

The history of *Palmendos*. 71

of *Carderia*, wher at his Maiestie greatlie meruailing, imagined this knight to be the Queene of *Tharsus* Son. Now was he much moze desirous to see him, then before, remembering what kindnes shee shewed him in the Realme of *Pasmeria*: then causing his owne King to be brought, and compared with that the Princesse was, they were founde in every point so like and conforable, as hardly could the one be knowne from the other. Indeede they were made both by one workman, and magicallie charmed like in resemblance, as the perfect signall to discover the originall of *Palmendos*: which made the Emperour conceiue some suspicion, that this vnknowne knight shoulde be his Son, especiallie when he called the Queens darke speeches to memorie, which she vied after her acquaintance with him. Yet would he not reueale this doubt to anie one, but past it ouer with fresh welcomming the Queene & her daughter, and deliuering in speeches, that hee was glad Belcar kept not the Bridge, when it was *Palmendos* fortune to arriue there, yet was hee sorrie for *Tirendos* mishap: albeit he commended the courtesie of the Conquerer, in exacting no further on the Prince of *Mecana*.

But leaue we *Palmendos* and *Ozario* traouailing toward *Turkie*, and speake a little of *Recinde* the *Castilian* Prince, being one of them that followed in his search.

The history of Palmendos.

CHAP. XXIII.

Howe Recinde pursuing the search of Palmendos, reskewed a Merchaunt from five Theeves, whom he dyscomfited on the mountayne. And how by the meanes of an Archer that bent his bowe against him, hee came to the mouth of a deepe Caue, where hee kyllled a Lyon that kept it, and deliuered thence a Lady, which was enchanted into the shape of a Serpent.



Ecinde leauing Constantinople, for the same cause as the other knights did, happened to the same place where Palmendos lodged the night before, demanding of his Hoste, if he had seene anie such man, who made this answer. Verilie the same man that had the honour of y^e Tourney, was my guesse this last night, and neuer did I see a more courteous Gentleman, which makes me hope he wil ende the aduenture of Francelina, whether he is gone as he tolde me he would. With these words the Spanyard was well contented, minding to follow him to the Isle of Carderia, and ryding by the way, he heard a verie lamentable cry, which caused him to looke about, when he espyed one hanging on a Tree by y^e armes, and five villaines harde by making a fire, to dresse some foode they had killed on the Mountaine. Comming to the man that hunge in this wofull plight, he cut him downe, and vnderstanding that these villaines had robd & so misused him: caused the Merchaunt to take his weapon, and so they setting vpon the Theeves, slew thre of them, drey-
uing

The history of *Palmendos.* 72

ving the other to flight, by which meanes the Merchant had most of his treasure againe, for which hee thanked the Prince, and mounting on horsebacke accompanied him on the waie. Not farre had they gone, but they met a Knight unarmed, of huge constitution and euill favoured, hauing a *Turkie Bowe* in his hand, and a Quiver hanging by his side full of Arrows, of whom they desired to knowe which way they should get soorth of the Forrest. The discourteous Knight (without making any answer) let flye an Arrow at them, wherewith hee killed the Prince. Recindes horse, he being not a little mooued at this mishap, grewe into great choller against him, who made no longer staye, but ranne from them so fast as hee could. Recinde and the Merchant still pursued, till hauing lost the sight of him, and meruailing where he should be hidden, at length they founde the mouth of a very dark Caeue, which they suspected the Knight had taken for refuge: whereuppon the Prince intreated the Merchant to staie there without, because hee intended to search the Caeue, and be reuenged on the Knight that had so wronged him. Not farre had he gone vnder the earth, but hee hearde a pittifull voyce crying for helpe, which caused him to returne backe againe, when at the entrance of the Caeue he behelde a mightie Lyon, which came soorth with the Knight, and ran tppon the Prince exceeding furiously: but he who could not bee frighted with matters of greater moment, so valiantlie defended himselfe against the Beast, as in short time hee layde him dead at his fote. Now ranne the Knight backe againe into the Caeue, and the Prince after him so fast as he could, till at length he came into a goodly Hall, which was hanged rounde about with gorgeous Tapestrie, and therein might one beholde all such as passed by the mouth of the Caeue, as if they had discerned the same in a Glasse. While he stood beholding this beautiful prospect, he saw the Knight comming towarde him Armed, and drawing his Sworde, thus spake to the Prince.

The history of *Palmendos*.

Wretched Knight, ouermuch foolish hardines hath brought thee to this place, for I shall let thee see the danger incurred by thy presumption. More indiscreetly, (O the Prince, hast thou behaved thy selfe, in killing my horse without any occasion of offence. Wherewith they Combatred a long while together, till the Knight seeing himselfe unable to resist the Prince, would haue saued himselfe in the Chamber he came from, offering to keepe the doore against him as his defence: but Recinde thrusting after him into the Chamber, behelde a great & hideous Dragon lying there, the sight wherof made him somewhat amazed, yet seeing the beast stirred not against him, continued his former quarrell with the Knight, bringing him at length into such subication, as with his Sword he smote his head from his shoulders. The Serpent terrefied with extreame feare, began to shrinke backe, when Recinde lifting up his Sword to strike, the Serpent spake in this manner.

Sir Knight, for Gods sake pittie me, and seeke not to shed my blood, hauing no way offended ye: so shall I be perpetually bounde at your commaundement, for deliuering me from this cruell Knight, who hath forcibly kept mee heere the space of five yeeres. The Prince hearing these wordes, helde downe his Sword, where the Serpent thus proceeded. I am no Serpent Sir, as happily I seeme in your eye, but a most unfortunate and abused Damosell, hauing suffered the most miserable life that euer Woman endured, lying (against my will) in the custodie of this trayterous Knight. If thou art a humane creature, answered Recinde, I meruaile thou shouldst haue the shape of such a deformed beast. I know sayd the Damosell, what representation I haue in your iudgement, but I dare assure ye on my life, that I am no Serpent or any thing els but a most distressed Woman. Which well she might as firme, because the Knight nowe sayne, (to conceale her the more cunningly) made her to resemble so by Arte magicke, as you shall vnderstand the whole at large.

Hee

The history of *Palmendos*. 73

He loued this Damosell so extreamlie, she being the Daughter of an auncient *Widdowe* dwelling not far off, as seeing he could not obtayne her in marriage, by reason of his badde manners and euill favoured bodie: so laboured with a Magitian a freende of his, to cause her resemble a Serpent to any but himselfe. Her Mother and Wetheren ignorant of this trecherie: seeing such an ougly Serpent among them: affrighted at this strange Metamorphosis, presently fled soorth of their Castell. The Payden following to vnderstand the cause of their feare, wandered somwhat fully after them thorow the fieldes, where she was supplied by her Loner, and brought to the Cave prepared by the Sorcerer, appointing she should continue in that appearance, till one of the best Knights in the world should arrive there, and valiantly wime her out of his custodie, only by his death to be deliuered, and fife yeeres shee had a bode in that place, seeming a beautifull weman to her Loner onelie, and to all other a monstrous Serpent. Recinde driven into wonderfull admiration, bemoaning her case, thus spake.

In sooth, this is the most strange accident that euer I heard of, but seeing your Loner is dead, boldlie may ye depart this Chamber, and returne home to your Mother againe: for in time (perhaps) this hidious shape will forsake ye. My Lord, quoth she, I haue manie times stryuen to get soorth of this pryson, but all my labour hath bene in vaine: for by like sortilodge hath the Knight bounde mee here, as he got me from my Mothers Castell. So am I perswaded, answered the Prince, wherfore seeing of your selfe ye cannot depart, I will trie if my strength will release ye of this seruitude. Then taking his Arming gyrdle from about him, hee made it fast about the Serpents middle, and forcible thought to pull her out of the Chamber, but the strength of the enchauntment ouer-maistring him, when he had gotten her to the verie dore, would violently pluck her back againe. Yet Recinde being all hart

The history of *Palmendos*.

and courage, gaue not ouer for all these resistaunces, but at length by exceeding labour and trauaile, hee gotte her into the open Vall, and then she seemed a verie beautiful Woman, who falling downe at his fete, intreated him not to forsake her, till he had brought her to her Mothers Castell. So going south of the Caue, she told the Merchaut all that had happened, which made him answer her in this sort.

Madame, bothe you and I are highly beholding to this Knight, for he hath miraculously recalled you from a lamentable sufferance, and not onelie hath he saued my life, but holpe me to my goods againe which were vtterlie lost, wherefore wee haue good cause to thinke that hee is the onelie Paragon of Chivalrie. So breaking off these speeches, they tooke the Knights horse, because hee had slayne the Prince, and mounting the Damosell behynde him, brought her home to her Mothers Castell, the auncient Ladie, being not a little ioyfull to see her Daughter, who shee reputed vtterlie lost: likewise her Bretheren were verie glad to see their Sister restored home againe. As for their freendlie entertainment, you may iudge it by the cause, which being of nature, must needes surpasse all other whatsoeuer.

CHAP.

The history of *Palmendos*. 74

CHAP. XXV.

How Recinde arrived at the Isle of Carderia, where understanding that Palmendos had ended the adventure, he went to seeke Belcar at Macedon: and of the Combat he had with him, by the false perswasion of the Damosell, that followed the reuenge of her bretherens death.



Durs daies staid Recinde and the Merchant at y^e olde Ladies Castell, and then taking they^r leaue, the Prince committed the Merchant to his owne occasions, and hee rode strait toward the Isle of Carderia, desirous to trie his fortune in the adventure, as also to finde the knight hee sought for: but being there arrived, he vnderstoode how Francelina was deliuered, Palmendos gone toward Turkie, and Tirendos abode at the Castell with Lypes & his Sisters, from whence he sent a Squire to Macedon, to certifie Belcar what had happened, as also to intreate him staid there for his coming.

As for the Prince Belcar, he being now with Alderina his chosen Distresse, to speake of all circumstances entercoursing between them, woulde be moze labour to me then pleasure to you. Shee accuseth him with a great manie articles of vngentlenes, that he would trauaile for Francelina, being before her bowed knight, and he excuseth al vnder this point, that what he did in a place of such triall, was onelie to eternize the name of Alderina, and nothing to the aduantage of Francelina, nor could y^e greatest

The history of *Palmendos*.

Monarch on the earth haue commaunded him from that seruice, but only the gracious Letter sent by her, wherefore he desired to returne thither againe, to make her more famous til the aduventure were ended. To stay her answer, and appease his hote desire, at that very instant the Courriere arrived sent from Tiredos, whose message being heard, highly was the Princesse contented, but Belcar ouercome with exceeding greefe, because sayne he would haue tryed his fortune against *Palmendos*.

Now come we to the Damosell againe, that pursued Belcar for the death of her Bretheren, according as you sufficientlie heard before, she vnderstanding that he was in the Court of *Macedon*, so highly loued of y King, Queen, and the whole nobilitie, she was out of hope to worke him iniurie there: wherefore she intended to returne hene againe, and by the way she happened to meet with y Prince Recinde, when beginning her accustomed complaints, she deliuered the same discourse which she had done to Cardino and Tiredos, saying that the Knight who had so trayterously slain her brethren, sojourned in the Court of *Macedon*. Recinde desirous to win honoꝝ by succouring the distressed, and hoping he might find the Knight he sought for at *Macedon*, answered her in this maner. If it be Damosel as you say, that the Knight in such trayterous sorte slew your brethren, I promise ye, by the faith I beare to Chivalrie, that to my power I will reuenge your wrong, because all Gentlemen receiuing this order, are bounde by dutie to assist Damosels, iniuriouly wronged by disloyall varlets. The crafty deceiuer sel at the Princesse side, affirming what she had saide with many othes. See then with me (q Recinde) to shew me the Knight, and either I will lose my life, or make him confesse his villainy. The offended palliard mounted on her Palfrey, and such space they made in trauaile, as at length they arrived at *Macedon*, when entring the great Hall, they founde there the King, Belcar and diuers noble Barons, whereupon the Damosel thus

The history of *Palmendos*. 75

thus spake to Recinde. See here my Lord, the Knight that slew my Brethren, I beseech yee make him knowe before the King, the reason he committed against harmeles men: for his Maestie not knowing the enormitie of the case, reputeth this offendour one of the most courteous Knights in his Court, as my selfe perceiued at my last being here. Recinde hauing with humble reverence saluted the King Florendos, turned to Belcar wth these speeches. Sir Knight, this Damosell hath swozne to mee that yeu haue trayterously slaine her two brethren, after you had been friendly entertained at her fathers house: if yee did so, surely it was an act far vnbecoming you, and by force of Armes I shall make ye so to confesse it, if you haue the hardines to enter the field with mee. Belcar greatly offended to heare himselfe so charged, and euermore by one that sought to bring his life in danger, in anger thus replied.

In sooth Knight, I cannot but think thy discretion very simple, in saying if I haue the hardines to enter the fildes with thee, and thy presumption is as insolent, as this Damosell is trothlesse and disloyall, in accusing mee without anie cause: notwithstanding, I hope to recompence ye for light beleefe, & that false woman likewise the instrument of thy follie. After these speeches, he went and Armed himselfe for the Combat, which the King many waies laboured to hinder, but Recinde continued so resolutely against Belcar, as the King could not diswade the matter, wherfore he thus spake to Recinde. Seeing yeu wil not at my intreatie giue over this rashnes, let me vnderstand the name of him that will not graunt so smal a matter, specially to one that is able to yeeld thanks therfore. I am, & Recinde, a Knight of a strange Country, who came to the Emperors Court at *Constantinople*, meane while the nuptialles of the *Hungarian Prince* were sollemnized, whether likewise came a Knight vnknowne, bearing a silver flower in his Shield: hee hauing won the honor of the Tourney, departed secretly from the assembly, which made me followe in

The history of *Palmendos*.

Monarch on the earth haue commaunded him from that seruice, but only the gracious Letter sent by her, wherfore he desired to returne thither againe, to make her more famous til the aduventure were ended. To stay her answer, and appease his hote desire, at that very instant the Courrier arrived sent fro Tirendos, whose message being heard, highly was the Princesse contented, but Belcar ouercome with excreting greefe, because fayne he would haue tryed his fortune against *Palmendos*.

Now come we to the Damosell againe, that pursued Belcar for the death of her Bzetheren, according as you sufficientlie heard befoze, she vnderstanding that he was in the Court of *Macedon*, so highly leued of y King, Quen, and the whole nobilitie, she was out of hope to worke him iniurie there: wherfore she intended to returne hene againe, and by the way she happened to meet with y Prince Recinde, when beginning her accustomed complainte, she deliuered the same discourse which she had done to Cardino and Tirendos, saying that the Knight who had so trayterously slain her bzethren, sojourned in the Court of *Macedon*. Recinde desirous to win honoz by succouring the distressed, and hoping he might find the Knight he sought for at *Macedon*, answered her in this maner. If it be Damosel as you say, that the Knight in such trayterous sorte slew your bzetheren, I promise ye, by the faith I beare to Chivalrie, that to my power I will reuenge your wrong, because all Gentlemen receiuing this order, are bounde by dutie to assist Damosels, iniuriouly wronged by disloyall varlets. The crafty deceiuer sel at the Princesse side, affirming what she had saide with many othes. See then with me (y Recinde) to shew me the Knight, and either I will lose my life, or make him confesse his villainy. The offended palliard mounted on her Palfrey, and such spæde they made in trauaile, as at length they arrived at *Macedon*, when entring the great Hall, they founde there the King, Belcar, and diuers noble Barons, whereupon the Damosel thus

The history of *Palmendos*. 75

thus spake to Recinde. See here my Lord, the Knight that slew my Brethren, I beseech yee make him knowe before the King, the reason he committed against harmeles men: for his Maiestie not knowing the enozmitie of the case, reputeth this offendour one of the most courteous Knights in his Court, as my selfe perceiued at my last being here. Recinde hauing with humble reuerence saluted the King Florendos, turned to Belcar wth these speeches. Sir Knight, this Damosell hath swozne to mee that yeu haue trayterously slaine her two b^rethren, after you had been friendlie entertained at her fathers house: if yee did so, surelie it was an act far vnbecoming you, and by force of Armes I shall make ye so to confesse it, if you haue the hardines to enter the field with mee. Belcar greatly offended to heare himselfe so charged, and euermore by one that sought to bring his life in danger, in anger thus replied.

In sooth Knight, I cannot but think thy discretion very simple, in saying if I haue the hardines to enter ^the field with thee, and thy presumption is as insolent, as this Damosell is trothlesse and disloyall, in accusing mee without anie cause: notwithstanding, I hope to recompence ye for light belæse, & that false woman likewise the instrument of thy follie. After these speeches, he went and Armed himselfe for the Combat, which the King many waies laboured to hinder, but Recinde continued so resolutely against Belcar, as the King could not diswade the matter, wherefore he thus spake to Recinde. Seeing yeu wil not at my intreatie giue over this rashnes, let me vnderstand the name of him that will not graunt so smal a matter, specially to one that is able to yeld thanks therfore. I am, & Recinde, a Knight of a strange Country, who came to the Emperors Court at *Constantinople*, meane while the nuptialles of the *Hungarian* Prince were sollemnized, whether likewise came a Knight vnknowne, bearing a silver flower in hys Shield: hee hauing won the honour of the Tourney, departed secretly from the assembly, which made me followe in

The history of *Palmendos*.

searche of him : and in respect I am but a poore Knight errant, I desire no wrong may be offered me in the battail. He therof assured, answered the King, that none shal meddle with you but your aduersary onlie : & trust me it grieueth me to the very hart, that comming from the Court of the Emperour Palmerin my Sonne, you should here enter the fiede against Belcar, who is one of his Maiesties cheefest fauourites. When Recinde heard Belcar named, on the one side it displeased him, y he was to deale with a Knight so famous and renowned : on the other side it grieved him as much, when he considered the neere alliaunce betwene him and Melicia, whom he loved as his verie soule, so that willinglie he would haue forborne the Combat, but that he could not with honoꝝ gaine say it.

So the King desires the Duke of *Pontus*, and another of his cheefest Barons, to iudge the fight according to conscience, and without any exception of person. Some after the Champions enter the Listes, where breaking theyꝝ Launces brauelie in the carrire, they were both dismounted, notwithstanding they quicklie recovered themselves, and drawing their Swords fell to the Combatte. Long while they continued a most furious fight, sharpe & cruell woundes being deliuered on either side, that iudgement could not be giuen who was in greatest daunger : but his Maiestie seeing Belcar were very feeble, and that it was like this fight would ende bothe their liues, as one loth to see the death of eyther, he threw his staffe of peace betwene them : then comming downe from the window where he stode into the fild, he desired them at his request to ginsouer the fight. By gracious Lord, answered Recinde, that may we not consent vnto, vnlesse the Damosell that complained of Belcar, will first remit the iniurie he hath done her. My selfe will thereto perswade her, said the King, in meane while do you traualle no further in this controuersie, seeing you haue bothe shewen sufficient and haughtie Chualrie. So went the King to the Damosell, who was
won

The history of *Palmendos*. 76

wonderfull glad to see Belcar in such dangerous estate, as no Knight befoze had brought him in the like. Damosel of he, seeke not the death of two so good Champions as these are, but (for my sake) pardon Belcar if hee haue in ought offended, and I shall cause him to make such amendes, as your selfe shall like well thereof: beside, such courtesie shall ye find at my hand, as happilie shall yeeld occasiō of thanks while yee liue. Hereto will I neuer consent though I die, quoth she, and moze wold the present death of Belcar content me, then if the whole Monarchie of the world were vnder my puissance: considering the enormie and detestable treason, wherewith hee villainously wronged my Father and Bretheren, which makes mee I cannot discharge my Knight of his promise. The King with great instance intreated her againe, and so did all the Lords attending on him: but all was in vaine, shee was so resolutely grounded in her wickednes, as shee accounted it pleasure to be selfe-willed therein. Whereupon, the Quene (hartily sorie to see Belcar so sore wounded) vnderstanding the obstinate refusal of the Damosell: she accompanied with the Duchesse of *Pontus*, and the Princesse Alderina her Daughter, came altogether and desired her, to discharge her Knight of his promise, and the Quene would entertaine her among the Ladies of honour in her Court. But these prayers and requests nothing auailed, to moue any pittie in this inerrorable Damosell, which the Quene perceiuing, and that she continued so obstinate in crueltie: she made a sollemn othe, that if she did not presently pardon the two Knights, (hearing a murmuring among the people, how her accusations against Belcar, were false and slanderous) that her selfe should die a most shamefull death. The Damosel seeing the Quene so displeased, was affraid of her cause, and beside shee grieved to beholde the teares of faire Alderina, wherfoze she alighted from her Palfrey, and falling at the Quenes feete, desired her not to regard her great error of ingratitude, which she had shewed to the King her husband,

in

The history of *Palmendos*.

in denying a matter consisting in her power : but for her Maiesties sake, shee was content to pardon both y^e knights. The Queene embraced her in signe of thanks, sending word to Recinde, that hee should proceede no further in battaile, so the Damosell went with the Queene and her Ladies to the Pallace, and bothe the Champions accompanied the king, who bringing them to their Chambers, commaunded that his cheefe Physicians and Chirurgions should giue dilligent attendaunce to see their wounds healed.

Dailie would the Queene, accompanied wyth the Duchesse of *Pontus*, and the sayre Princesse Alderina her Daughter, come to visite them, so that at length they reconciled the two Princes to amitie, and shortly after, the Queene (in regarde of her promise) caused the Damosell to bee very honourable married, when Belcar made her openly confesse, that her accusations were most false and vnttrue, in respect that hee neuer sawe any of her Bretheren, befoze that night wherein hee was intreated by her father to lodge at his Castell. But leave we these, and let vs nowe retorne againe to our noble knight *Palmendos*, whom we left preparing his voyage towards *Turkie*.

CHAP.

The history of *Palmendos*. 77

CHAP. XXVI.

How after Palmendos and Ozalio were embarked for Turkie, they landed at a port neere the Castell of Albayzo, where the King of Thessalie was kept prisoner: and howe Palmendos intended to bee at the Tourney, which was prepared for the marriage of the Captaines sonne, and what was his successe.



After that Palmendos and Ozalio, had left the *Quene* of *Thessalie* & her daughter *Francelina*, they posted with al speed to their Ship: the *Marriners* hauing in the time of their abode there, happened on a *Turke* left therein the *Hauen* by reason of extream sicknes, wherefoze they of *Tharsus*, knowing him to bee a *Woe*, took him into their ship, and by the time of the *Princes* arrivall, he had verie well recovered his health. He vnderstanding that Palmendos woulde saile into *Turkie*, desired to graunt him passage thither, and in recompence of that gentlenes, hee would direct him whether hee pleased, because hee knewe all the portes and creekes of the Countrey, and most of the Cities and Townes on the land. Palmendos ioyfull of this good hap, accepted him for his patrone, and without concludiug to what place they would first saile, hee wylled them to make toward the neereſt port to the Citie of *Turbant*: demaunding of the *Turke*, if he knew any harbour of ſuretie neere that place. By Lord (quoth the *Turke*) I will conduct ye if you please, into a ſtraight of the Sea, which is verie ſecret, where oftentimes ride diuers great veſſels, and no other place of lodging is neere at hand, but

U. 1. my

77 The history of *Palmendos*

my fathers house onely, which standeth a daies iourney from *Tubant*, and the like from the Castell of *Albayzo*, where the great Turke at this present keepes the king of *Thessalie* and all his treasure, under the charge of a good Knight who is the Captaine of the Castell, and this place bee reputeth as the strongest holde in all the Countrey. Whoeuer this I dare auouch for, that there is no part so little in all that Countrey, but I knowe it as well by night as by day, euen as perfectly as the porte whereof I tell ye: there may you abide in assurance, and doe what best your selfe shall please, uncontrouled by any, this wyll I make good for the great courtesie I haue found. *Palmendos* seeing how Fortune favoured him, committed his conducting to the Turke, who was named *Orycano*, when at length they came to the porte nere *Tubant*: then *Orycano* went on horse with the Knightes, to take some order for their good entertainment, but finding not his father at home, entreated his mother and two brethren, who were not a little glad of his safe return, to vse those Gentlemen so courteously as might be, expressing what kinde-nesse hee had found at their hands. *Palmendos* reioyced that they were in a place so safe and secret, and nere *Albayzo* Castell, where the King of *Thessalie* was detained in captiuitie, yet kept he on his rich black Armour, which the Fairies left for him at the Castell of *Carderia*, his good sword likewise hee had by his side, wherewith hee could enchaunt and bring asleepe anye one by drawing it forth. It was large and short as a woodknife or *Fauchion*, most artificially damasqued and garnished with three sortes of Diamonds, the whole sheath being composed of one, the mosse-barre and pomell of an other, and the handle of the cross rare and precious Calamite that euer was sene, the blade of the finest tempered Steele that coulde bee in any sword, in briefe, the like weapon was hardly to be found through the worlde. By this time *Orycanos* father was come home, who reioycing to beholde his Sonne, shewd
very

The history of *Palmendos*. 78

very louing countenance to the princes for his sake: when among other talke, Palmendos requested to knowe of the olde man whence he came so late, whereto the poore man humbly thus answered. I come Sir, from a Town not far hence, whether I went in the morning to sell fish, because greate number of Knights are assembled there, against the marriage of the Lozdes daughter, with the son to the Captaine of Albayzo Castell: and I staid the longer, to see the Bridegrome and his Sister, who is reported to bee the fairest woman in the worlde. By manie great Princes she hath bene requested in marriage, but she hath refused enery one, saying she will neuer be married, but with him that can winne her by partiall prowess: for which cause many braue and gallant Knights are come thither, and on the third daye of the feast, haue appointed a Tourney for her loue, the resort being so great to see this Ladie, as if the great Turke with all his Basses and Janizaries kept Court there. Palmendos attentively noting this tale, considered with him selfe, that if hee could by subtil traines entice this Ladie to loue, hee might easily get into Albayzo Castell, where he should the better compassse the stratageme, to set the King of *Thessalie* at libertie: for this cause he determined to be present at the Tourney. and in bedde acquainted Ozalio with his whole intent, who thought it the onely waye to wooke their enterprize. On the morrowe Palmendos tolde the Fisher, that he would make one in the Joust: so giuing him good stoze of money, prayed him to regarde his Ship and Marriners till hee returned, and so hee set forward with Ozalio and Orycano, who serued them faithfully during all this busines. Not farre had they rid, but they met with a Page that attended on Iffida, for so was the beautifull virgin named, the Captains Daughter and occasion of this triumph: Palmendos asked him, if the Tourney held the day following. It doth Sir, answered the Page, by generall agreement, and so please yee to bee

The history of *Palmendos*.

there, you shall see many valiant knights enter the field, where I hope the pertakers of Ripole, for so was the Bridegroom called, shall beare away the honour of the day: and sundrie brave champions will adventure for the love of Iffidamy Mistres, whereby they may gaine the better meane to offer her their service, intending therfore to bee on her brothers side, who is the chiefe man in this enterprise.

The Prince calling to minde the perfections of Francelina, breathed forth a sigh that came from his very soul, on the other side, he was marvellous glad, that he had so fortunately met with the Ladies Page: and desirous to gaine some acquaintance with her, he speaketh to the youth in this manner. Gentleman, I thinke the graces of your Mistresse to be so amiable, as in one instant they are sufficient to captivate all such as beholde her, and therefore I can assure ye, that with the better will & more sincere affection, is he provided to her service that never saw her: which I speake on mine own behalfe, who abandoning the place of my original, have with insupportable travells cross many Countries, onely to come let her understande my extreame devotion, to be her perpetuall and faithfull servant, whereto the renown of her beautie induced me, which I thinke is spread over the face of the whole earth. And seeing my hap was so good to meete with you, albeit you know mee not, nor have I yet deserved any thing at your hand: yet let me intreat ye to do one favour for me, the issue wherof, beside your atchievement of notable reputation in debonaire courtesie, which all of your young yeeres ought to have in singular commendation: I hope shall let ye sufficiently perceive, that you deale not for an ingratefull person, nor wil ye mislike your travaile in the cause. What would you have me do? answered the Page, in respect you seeme a man of vertue and quality: if it bee a thing possible for me and honourable, I will with all my heart accomplish it. A thousand thankses for your friend-
liness,

The history of *Palmendos*. 79

linesse, answered *Palmendos*, and for nothing els is my
 sute, but that you would say to your Ladie *Mistresse*, how
 a strange Gentleman, which came into this countrey on-
 lie to see her graces and vertues, most humbly commends
 him selfe to her favourable opinion, earnestlye desiring
 that she would accept him as her Knight in the Tourney,
 where to morrow hee intends to shewe him selfe, as one
 that will ouer ballance her most fauoured in weight of af-
 fection, and will be accounted second to none in exploits of
 armes, hauing no better meane, whereby to acquaint her
 with the insupportable burthen of his heart: and that she
 may well perceiue it, I will not bee on her brothers side,
 but against them that take his part, hoping to send them
 vanquished out of the fielde, or make them gladde to take
 their heels, by the strength and hardines her diuine beau-
 tie shall giue mee, so please her to graunt mee the afoze-
 said fauour, and which will cause me to account my selfe
 the happiest Knight, on whom the planets haue breathed
 their celestiaall influence. The Page seeing *Palmendos*
 faire and so richly armed, imagined him to be some great
 personage, wherefore he modestly thus replied. My Lord
 this dare I not doo for any man liuing, without I knewe
 the partie to haue some familiaritie with my *Mistresse*:
 neuerthelesse, being a matter of so small consequence, and
 that you deserue much more then this on my behalfe, I
 shall deliuer her this message, for your sake who haue so
 importunately requested it. *Palmendos* requited the Page
 with many thanks, and to make him more forward in the
 matter, hee tooke a bracelet of golde from his arme and
 gaue it him: so beguiling the time with other speeches, at
 length they arriued at *Prissa*, for so was the Town called
 where the Triumphes were appointed, the field being co-
 nered all ouer with costly Pavilions, wherefore *Palmen-*
dos made choise of a conuenient place, and there comman-
 ded his rich Tent to be presently erected. Meane while
 the Page courteously toke his leaue, & entering the town,

U. 3.

went

The history of *Palmendos*.

Went straight to his Mistresse lodging, where hauing first dispatched the answer sent from her Sister, and seeing her so conuenientlie apart from her Damosels, he rehearsed all that Palmendos had said vnto him. I wonder, (quoth she) what the Knight should bee, that durst send mee such a presumptuous message, seeing he saith he is a stranger, and for my loue hath forsaken his Countrey. Belene me Madame, answered the Page, nor doe I know him, but hee seemeth to bee descended of great parentage, and is one of the goodliest personages that euer I saw: as for his courtesie and liberalitie, behold Mistres, what a costly Bracelet hee hath giuen mee, that neuer did anie thing for him in all my life.

He thinks this is verie strange, replied Iffida, that this Knight should come from farre Countries to see me, and verie ingratefull might I be reputed, if I should not thanke him for so great paines: therefore faile not but shewe me him to morrow, so soone as hee dooth enter the Lisses, that I may give good heede to his behauiour. Herein, (quoth the Page) wil I accomlishe your commaund, because right well I know him by his rich Armour, as also the lustie Courser hee rode on yester day. Thus made the Page a train for loue, which afterward reached to the heart of his Mistresse, where hauing kindled the fire herselfe, shee felt the sparkes so to leape about her imaginati- ons, as all this night she could enioy no rest, for thinking on the Knight that came from far Countries.

CHAP.

The history of *Palmendos*. 80

CHAP. XXVII.

How Palmendos came to the Tourney appointed for Iffida, where he wonne her by his Knightly chivalry, and by that occasion obtained her loue. And how they spake together by the meanes of their Ambassadour, so that Palmendos and Ozalio easilie entred the Castell of Albayzo.



On the morrow, which was the appointed day of the Triumph: Iffida decked her selfe in moste sumptuous ornaments, and after dinner came with the Bride and diuers other Ladies, to the Scaffolde and Pavillions prepared for them in the field. The assembled the Knights on all sides, and entered the Lists each one to shewe his prowesse, but because the greater part were on the Bridegromes side, therefore the contrarie went apace to wacke, and the other were verily iudged to beare the Bride out of the fiede, if Palmendos and Ozalio had not suddainlie arrived. For they knew better how to handle their weapons, then the Knights of this Countrey did, and that they made them verie well perceiue, especially Palmendos who did marvellous exploits, as Iffida (without any instruction of her Page) knew well inough the man that sent her the message, whereat both she and all the beholders were amazed, to see him so play the Denil among the Knights, as no one dealt with him but was unhorsed. When they saw there was no more worke to doo, they withdrew themselves into their Tent, and would not harme themselves, least some treacherie should be practised against them, as oftentimes at such occasions it happeneth,

The history of *Palmendos*.

happeneth, when the vanquished attempt vnbonourable against the Conquerours. When Ripole saw his Knights so discomfited, he was exceedingly agréued therewith, because he entirely loued his Sister Iffida, and doubted shee would not conuict him of great dishonour: but shee whose minde was no where els, then on the Knight to whom the victorie was due, extolled his admirable magnanimity to the heauens, as the rest of her Historie will plainly discover, and knowing no better meane to worke by, she called the Page aside, whome the Prince had imploied as his Ambassadour, and thus shee spake to him. Unspeakable (in mine owne opinion) is the generositie of the Gentleman Stranger, who hath right well perfourmed the resolution, whereof by thee he assured mee yester-day: very necessarie is it therefore, that thou goe thanke him on my behalfe, for his long iourney and great paines taken for my sake: beside, as he hath sufficiently shewen me his fortune in deedes of armes, so doe I desire secretly to see his person, in which request to satisfie me, if he wil this night come to my brothers banquet, which is provided for the newe married couple, I shal not fail to esteeme him among my cheefest fauourites.

While euery one was busilie censoring on the conquerour, the messenger from Iffida came to Palmendos Tent, where briefly discharging what he was commaunded, and the Prince marueilous glad of this good fortune, thus answered.

Gentleman, I desire ye to tel your Lady, that nothing shall make me disapoint her pleasure, because the onely occasion of my long trauaile, was extreame desire to offer her my seruice, and right happye shall I account my selfe, if she will employ me in any thing to her content. To be at the Bridegromes banquet, me thinkes should argue ouer much boldnesse, in respect of the slender acquaintance and habitude, which as yet I haue with him or any of his company: Notwithstanding, I would willingly bee there
after

The history of *Palmendos*. 81

after the banquet, to guide mine eyes to the place, where they might see on the celestial and gracious countenance of your Mistress, yet with this entreatie before hand, that I would not be known to any what I am. And if it happen I may conferre a little with her in secret, I will tel her such thinges, as all the rest of her life-time shall yeelde her contentation, wherein likewise if you will bee loyall and favourable to me, to compasse both her good and your owne: your guerdon happily will be such, as you will a hundred & a hundred times thinke the tower fortunate, when by so good chance you met me on the way, for though you see me here but in simple equipage, and as a Knight errant, I am the Lord of many Provinces, great estates and wonderfull riches. My Lord answered the Page, right willingly will I adventure my person, in doing you all the faithfull service can be deuised, the actions no way stretching to the dishonour of me and my Lady: and such good order will I likewise take, as you shal not be known to any, but onely her that longeth to see you.

Hereupon Palmendos vnarmed him selfe, and putting on a Turkish mantle, taking his good sword vnder his arm, hee and Ozalio went with the Page into the great Hall wher the banquet was: afterward they closely got to a convenient place, where both Iffida and he might behold each other, which he did but with faint and deluding looks, onely to adde some grace to his subtil determination, which he had practised for the King of *Thesalies* deliuerance. And while in this counterfeit contemplation he busied his eyes, the Page cunninglye went to Iffida, and whispering in her eare, saide. My Madame the conquering Knight of the Tourney, who desires you very instantly, to conceale hym onely to your selfe, in that his trauaile hither was to no other end, but to see if your gracious gifts and beauty, were answerable to the remoune blazed thereof so far hence in his Countrey, hoping to compasse the matter so, (for to me he hath opened the very secrets of his heart) that when you haue

The history of *Palmendos*.

hane further knowledge of him : you shall not onely have occasion to love him, but account your selfe likewise beholding to him, in respect of the voluntary paine he hath suffered for your sake. The rest of his speeches I shall tel you at better leasure, in place more convenient for such discourse.

Iffida who was prudent and well advised, forbore to conferre longer with her newe solicitour, least her love should be lightly espied by any: then secretly she glanceth on *Palmendos*, whose thoughts were busie to compass his intent, and seeing him so pensive, she immediately interpreted this *Saturnine* taciturnitie to her own advantage, thinking it proceeded from the ravishment of her beautie, as her Ambassadour had before perswaded her: herewith she iudged in him, more elegancie of forme and swaetnes of complexion, then in any other knight whatsoeuer, which made her so espized with his attracting regard, as to allay the extremitie of this heat, she desired nothing more then to speake with him, that she might bee resolved of whence and what he was. *Palmendos* stirred not from his place, nor thought he long of his stay there, because he hoped to gather some fruite thereby: but warily markes the amorous looks of Iffida, and how her eye was the messenger of her inward desire, all which he covertly imparted to *Ozario*, who moved not one foot from his deere friend.

They fearing least their long stay would cause suspicion, went their way, which made Iffida likewise repaire to her Chamber, and calling the minister of her love aside, began in this manner.

Ah Page, how true didst thou discover the perfections of the strange knight, whose behaviour and discreet modestie, ioynd with his rare & martiall prowess, makes mee repute him for the cheefest man, that euer came into this Countrey. Madame answered the young Counsellor, if you would see innumerable vertues conioyned in one body, I beseech you hasten your speaking with him, and let

The history of *Palmendos*. 82

let not the happye houre miscarrie through your default, which the fatall destinies haue so graciously appointed: bys louely speeches shall acquaint yee with his endowments, which you may beholde so corespondent in euery point, as you can wish for nothing but is to be found in him. How should I speake with him, saied Iffida, without impeach to mine honoꝝ, which hitherto I haue carefully regarded, but lesse it be by thy meanes in some secret place, free from the hurt of suspected persons, wherewith the woꝛlde is nowe mightily storied? I shall tell ye how Madame, replied the Page, you know my Lord your father willed yee the other day, that yee should returne home to him with all possible speed, which will serue as a fit occasion, to take your honest farewell of this company: if then you will depart hence to morowe towarde euening, you may lodge by the way at my mothers house: whether I will go befoze with the two Knights, and cause her to say they be both her Nephewes, who now are friendly come to visite her, so may ye confer together at your pleasure. The inuention is good answered Iffida, yet must ye be very circumspect herein, that the drift of our intent be not discovered.

The complot thus concluded, the Page went in the morning to Palmendos, and making him not a little glad with these newes, caused both the friends to mount on horse backe, and set forward with him to his mothers house, seated in a pleasant place betwene *Tubant* and the Castell of *Albayzo*. When the Gentlewoman saw the two knights, she was much abashed, but her Sonne soon resolved her in euery point: and that shee might boldly call them her Nephewes, her selfe being a stranger borne far from that Countrey. The mother being thoroughly instructed by her Sonne, desired their intent might take good successe, whereupon the Page returned to his Mistresse, who had in this while so well ordered her departure, as the new married noꝝ any other could gather suspicion: then forward she sets, for her iourney had hast, so surely had Loue seized

The history of *Palmendos*.

on her hart, hauing no other company with her, then her foure waiting Damoels and two Squiers of her fathers.

Nowe is she come to the long desired place, where being very graciously entertayned, both by *Palmendos* and *Ozario*, as also the *Pages* mother. *Iffida* being not to learne her lesson, desires to know what Knights they were that so friendly saluted her. They are quoth the *Pages* mother, my two Nephewes, who hauing not seene mee of long time, are come to know if they may stand me in anie Steele: as also to offer their seruice to my Lord your father, if in any thing it shall please him to imploy them. Right hartily welcome are they, answered *Iffida*. and of dutye I must needs thanke them, for the good will they beare my Lord and Father: for which cause, as also their rare alliance to you, I loue them as they were my proper Brethren.

Palmendos comming to her with great reuerence, gaue her humble thanks for her honourable kindnes, and while they spent the time about other familiar conferences, supper was set on the table in a pleasant Arbour, where *Iffida* could digest no meat, her eyes were so busied in beholding her Champion, afterwarde they walked vp and downe the Garden, and shee seeing the *Pages* mother was deere in talke with *Ozario*, as one loth to lose so good an opportunity, she beginneth with *Palmendos* in this manner.

I cannot but maruaile at my selfe, (Sir Knight) that being nothing touched with the love of sundry gentlemen, which heretofore haue diuers times offered mee theyr seruice: my heart should by you (whome I neuer saw before these two daies past) so vehemently be prouoked to loue, so that I cannot heare or think on any thing, but it is broken or reiected by the remembraunce of you: let mee then intreat you, not to repute me as carelesse of my chastitye, or forgetfull of the modestie becoming a Virgin. For the worthy behauior, I see couched in your incomparable personage, hath fatally depriued mee of my former libertie, and yielded

The history of *Palmendos*. 83

yeelded me wholie your Captiue: not doubting but you will so esteeme of your conquest, as not to impeach the same by any unhonorable attempt, considering my noble birth and parentage. And to satisfie my earnest longing desire, one he adicted to haue further knowledge of your estate, acquaint me with the secret consideration of your heart, and what you will commaund me, in goerdon of the paines you haue taken for my sake: wherein (mine honour defended) I will yeeld that willingly to you, which none els but you can haue of me.

Madame answered Palmendos, I cannot expresse my high good fortune, finding such grace and courtesie at your hands, being on my part no way as yet deserved, but tyme may yeeld the due to euery gentle minde, and make mee able to requite such extraordinary fauour. And thinke not sweet Goddesse of my heart, that in pittying the insupportable burthen of mine oppressions, you shall any waye encrease the detection of lightnes, but rather of honorable and wel gouerned care. When you shall beholde the place whereto I hope safely to bring you: for Madam, setting aside my simple outward appearance, I am a King borne, & Gouerner of sundry famous Prouinces, and this attempt proceeded onely of religious zeale, to make you Lady of mee and mine, as your wonderful fame at first toke the soueraignty of my heart.

How can I worthy Lord, quoth Iffida, but stand amazed, that you being a King, and a man of so rare fortune in manning arms, should come hither for so simple a Damoysel as my selfe, not worthy to cast mine eyes to such preferment: yet not to dissemble with you as concerning my resolution, without my fathers consent, I neither may or will goe hence with you, because it were both disobedience and iniurie to nature.

Notwithstanding, one thing I will do for you, which neuer heretofore I offered to any Knight, I will bring you to my Father, and tell him you are one of this Gentlewo-

The history of *Palmendos*.

mans Nephewes, she being my nurse in the time of mine infancie : to him must ye offer your service, and no sooner shall he beholde your knightly chivalrie, but he will gladly accept ye as his Sonne.

So with my Parents consent you may conuaie mee hence, and in meane while I shall keepe secret your estate, albeit it were good you tolde him the trueth. Palmendos, who desired nothing but to get into the Castell, and to compassse the same by any way he could, thus replied.

Madame, such is the extremitie of my vehement passions, as no one can recure them, but shee from whome they take their originall, no2 do my vitall spirites receiue any force to execute their office, but from your gracious and gentle disposition : therefore I will go with you when you please to your Father, and say what you can best imagine, for the peaceable assurance and fruition of the good pretended. These wordes hee vttered with very cheerefull countenance, by reason of the hope wherewith his heart was encouraged, seeing the practise of his negotiation stand now on the termes him selfe desired : the Ladie on the other side was so raiued with his loue, as she could not be satisfied with beholding him, or consent to forsake his company, till time of constraint came that they must to their lodgings, where Iffida could not sleepe thorough the whole night, her slumbers were so broken by the abundance and plurality of amorous discourse, which chased all other imaginations from her spirit.

In these extreames poore Iffida was tormented, a disease cleane contrarie to that which troubled Palmendos, who only sought by dissimulation to recouer the good king of *Thessalie*, whercof he conferred in bed with Ozalio, what stratagems and subtilties hee must compassse in the action; intreating him most affectionatlie, they hauing once gotten entrance into the Castell, to shewe him selfe hardie and valiaunt, putting euery one to the sword when the watchword should be ginen. When the morning was come, Iffida
Decked

The history of *Palmendos*. 84

decked her selfe in her braue accoutrements, and remming into the Garden, found there the two knightes armed except their helmets, she praying them to go with her to the Castell of *Albayza*, that she might haue the honour of presenting them to the Captaine her father.

This matter being sone concluded, they all mounted on horsebacke, and about none arriued at the fortreffe, the foundation and structure whereof caused *Palmendos* to wonder, in that it was placed on a high and mightie rock, and stored with such munition for war as it was thought impregnable. Being come to the gate, *Iffida* lighted from her haqueney, and entred taking the knightes by the hand, the Arches permitting them quietly to passe, without any feare or further enquire what they were, seeing them so well acquainted with faire *Iffida*, whome the Castilian loued so well, as none might gaine-say what she commaunded.

Afterward the Bridges were drawen, and the gates strongly barred according as they were wont to be, so the Princes entering the great Hall, *Palmendos* diligentlie looked about him, thinking eche howe a yeare till the skirmishe were fought in this strong holde, thanking the heauens that had so well guided them thither.

The history of *Palmendos*.

CHAP. XXVIII.

Howe Palmendos and Ozalio slewe the Captaine of Albayzo Castell, and all the Guard that then kept it, taking the King of Thessalie forth of the Tower, where hee had remained captiue twentie yeeres: and what happened to them in the meane while.



When the Captaine of *Albayzo Castell*, (who was an honourable olde man, and put in chiefe trust with the great *Turkes* treasure) saw his Daughter accompanied with two such brave Knights, hee was thereat exceedingly amazed: as if this occurrence had already presaged the confliete and cruell slaughter, which was immediatlie to followe in the Castell, wherefore he said. *Why Daughter? how chaunceth it that you are come without your Brother? My Lord*, quoth hee, the desire I had yester-night to see you, hastened my returne in company of your two Squires, my foure waiting Damosels, and these two knights, who are both Nephews to my nurse, where I found them as I passed by that way: and hereof be assured good father, that this Knight (pointing to *Palmendos*) is one of the most hardie and courteous Gentlemen that euer ye knewe. Whereof his victorie in the *Tourney* at my Brothers marriage, hath giuen me euident example, as also the honest speeches he hath vsed to mee this morning, declaring his earnest desire to offer you his service: vnder hope whereof I haue bene his guide hither, esteeming the acquisition of such a man rare & of great consequence, and will chiefly helpe the strength of your charge.

He

The history of *Palmendos*. 85

He is the better welcome, answered the Captaine, and in recompence of his good will, hee shall commaunde any courtesie at my hand. For all these wordes, he had other matters in his minde, and because his Daughter praised him so much, so much the more willingly could hee haue spared his companie in the Castell, for that his presence made him misdout and feare somewhat: yet to dissemble the matter, & take away all occasion of contrary mistrust, with a counterfeit merrie countenance he said.

Goe Daughter and salute thy mother, meane while these Knights shalbe vnarmed: which he spake to bee assured of their Armour and weapons, intending they shold not haue them againe till they were forth of the Castell. But Palmendos hearing these wordes, began to misdoubt their interpretation: and therefore thought best not to vse anye more speeches, but going with Iffidaes Page into a faire Chamber: in steede of vnarming them selues, they clasped on their Helmes, and taking their Shields with resolved courage, came forth hauing their good Swoordes readie drawn, Palmendos intending to trie the vertue of his enchanted sword, or els to put both their liues in danger. The Page seeing this sudden alteration, diuyn into as great a quandarie as if he had bene new metamorphised, began to crie out very pitifully, terming this act abhominable and scelerous disloyaltie: wherewith he ran downe to aduertise the Guard thereof, but they themselves were not farre behinde him, because Palmendos knew this enterprise was not to bee deferred, therefore hee and Ozalio came into the Castell Court, where they found the Captaine threatening the Guard, that they had so lightly suffered the Knights to enter: but they excused them selues on Iffida who brought them with her, wherewith the Captaine turning about, and seeing them come in such furie, hee cried to the Guard, saying. Take Armes my loyall and faithfull Knights, and let vs murther these false traitors, who haue beguiled vs so treacherously.

P. 1.

Palmendos

The history of *Palmendos*.

Palmendos hauing instructed *Ozario*, to keepe sure the Gate that none might issue forth, or moze rescue come in, remembzing his swete Ladie *Francelina*, determined to die or deliuer her father from imprisonment.

Now makes he pzoofe of his Sword charmed by the Fairies, which as hee lifted about his head, caused euerie one that came against them sleepely to stagger, and when they offered to strike with their weapons, they fell down as though they had bene in a sound slape, being all in that case depzined of their liues, both the Captaine, the Guard, and the rest that could be found, except the Turke who guided them by Sea, and the Page that came with these newes to *Iffida* saying. Alas *Madame*, wee are all betrayed, by the false Knights that entred the Castell with vs: right woorthy am I of a thousand deaths, in that your Father and all the Garde haue lost their liues by my meanes.

When *Iffida* and her mother heard these vncomf table newes, they came downe as women disgraged of their wits, and seeing this lamentable massacre, she fell downe on her fathers dead bodie, saying. Ah my good Lorde and Father, pardon mee that was the cause of this thy death and seeing innocently I haue bene so circumvented by a false Traitor: my life shall presently followe thee at the heeles, to accomplishe thy obsequies with moze selemne pompe and ceremonies. Herewith she offered to run her head against a marble piller, but *Palmendos* came & staid her, when shee being greatly offended thereat, raging against him, thus spake.

Thou cruell, false and disloyall Knight, seeing thou hast slaine my Father and his chiefeest friends, why dost thou not send me to beare them company? Tell me thou bloodie *Barbarian*, what moued thee to repaye my saythfull loue with such extreme rigour? How durst thou deceine me so trecherously, considering what fauour I shewd thee on so small acquaintaunce: with guilefull and dissembling

The history of *Palmendos*. 86

sembling speeches, thou secretly saydest thou wast a King: but if thou bee one, it is of robbers and thieues, and art come hitther to steale the great Emperours treasure. Miserable and unhappie that I was, in giuing credite to such false persuasions, the ende whereof sorteth to such monstrous effect.

If such as heretofore haue knowen me, imagined me wise and discretely inclined, henceforth they may well tearme me a disloyall Daughter, being the onely cause of my fathers death: but though unwittingly I haue bene deceiued, yet will I complaine on Fortunes instabilitie that by the report of I know not what, frivolis and vain ostentation should so easily change my heart. But what will the mightie Emperour of *Turkie* say, when hee shall vnderstand the truth of this slaughter, wrought onely for the stealing hence of his treasure? Follis and miserable Gine, that I am, why did I not remember the sundry iniuries, his Maiesties brother sustained by the Emperour *Palmerin of Constantinople*, when he traiailed the world as a knight errant: had I but remembred those stratagems, they would haue forwarned me from affecting this stranger: yet if the fatal decree made me so soone subiect to him, why could he not fauour mee with my fathers life? *Palmendos* litle regarding her inuirtuous speeches, desired her to be better pacified, promising if she would depart thence with him, to sette the Crowne of *Thessalie* vpon her head, which he would giue to his Cousin *Ozallo*, and ioine her in marriage with him if she pleased.

Moreouer he assured her, that he would not take any thing out of the Castell but the King of *Thessalie*, whose deliuerance could not bee compassed by any intreaty, and therefore he ransomed him with the liues of so many. *Mahomet*, cried Iffida at these wordes, why sufferest thou Christians to make such incursions on thy people & Countries? Why didst thou creat and appoint women so neer to men, seeing that for them they passe thorough innume-

88 The history of *Palmendos*.

table torments: The brother to our great Emperour the *Flavie*, was cruellie murdered by the meanes of a woman, and now by me is his Captaine my father brought to the like end, his prisoner likewise the King of *Thessalia* thereby delivered: how can I but loath and despise my life, being hemmed in on euer side with such monstrous afflictions?

Needlesse is it now to remeber mortal incomburances, or to thinke on the warres which *Hesione* and *Helena* caused betwene the *Greekes* and *Troyans*: *Launina* betwene *Aeneas* and *Turnus*, or *Deianira* betwene *Hercules* and *Acheolus*, and after ward among the *Centaures*: for those which will spring by these new occasions ere long time bee spent, I feare will bee so horrible and infamous, as they will deface the memoie of them doone so long agoe. Afterward the mother and her daughter ran furiously on *Palmendos*, labouring to doe him what iniurie they could, but he (unwilling to hurt them) suffered their violence, til *Ozalioes* seeing their impatience, & fearing with their knives they would in the end murder him: took by one of the *Guardes* hatchets, and therewith depriued the mother of her life.

Iffida extremely raging at this gréuous spectacle, rent her haire from her head, and with her nassles cruellie martyred her faire face, then being suddainly suppressed with a raging apoplexie, presently died without vtiing any more speeches. The *Page* gréuing to behold this woeful accident, determined not to liue any longer after her: but first vpon the wall he wrote certaine dolorous verses, which after ward were conuerted to a funerall ditty, in this manner.

Dead

The history of *Palmendos*. 87

DEad is the bud of Beauties cheefe delight,
The fairest flower whereon the Sunne did shine:
The choyce belov'd of many a famous Knight,
The pride of honour, precious and diuine.
The louely Maid, of whome the Nymphes did sing:
That Nature neuer fram'de so rare a thing.

Had Paris scene this wonderous peece of art,
Proud Venus had not caried beauties prize:
Pallas and Iuno would haue stood apart,
To see their gifts one Virgin royallize.
In euerie point surpassing curious:
Had Fate and Fortune beene as gracious.

Ungentle starre that domineerd the day,
When first my Lady Mistres breath'd this aire
What angry obiect stood then in the way,
To crosse the course that was begun so faire?
You lowring beaueus, why did ye oppresse:
The Saint whome you so many waies did blesse?

But wretch, why stand'st thou charging these with guilt,
And art thy selfe the Authour of this ill?
Thou haplesse Boy thy Ladies blood hast spilt,
Thy Maister and his seruants thou didst kill.
When first thou trauald for this troblesse man:
Euen in that hower these miseries began.

But Soueraigne Loue, immortal and diuine,
Whose gracious name did shaddow this abuse:
Canst thou permit before thy boty eien,
This hainous deepe exempt from all excuse?
O mightie Loue, what will thy Subiects say:
If foule offence goe vnreueg'd away?

The history of *Palmendos*.

*Stand I expostulating this or that,
When on my backe the weightie burthen lies?
Waste no more time with vaine and idle chat,
But for this fault be thou a sacrifice.
Faile Iffida, thy Page doth follow thee:
The onely engine of this tragedie.*

These verses fixed on the wall by the Squire, hee ran hastily and caught by a Sword from one of the slaine Knights, and setting the point thereof against his heart, said. If you (Madame) by my meanes haue receiued this harde fortune, reason requires that for your sake I should endure as much : and with these wordes hee fell vpon the Sword.

This was the second act of the tragicall comedie begun at *Prissa*, & thus after continued in the Theater of *Albayzo*, where all they of the Castell miserably ended their lines, except three or foure Damoselles, and their waiting women : who likewise were so amazed at this lamentable spectacle, as they thought them selues halfe depriued of life. *Palmendos* being stricken in a dumpt by these accidents, stood a good while not able to speake a word: which his Cousin *Ozario* perceiving, and marneiling at his alteration, he came and comforted him in this sort. My Lord, you must now abandon all dumptish musing, and reioyce for your good successe in this attempt: neuer trouble your thoughts with other imaginations, but let vs determine our departure hence, before the matter bee further manifested, otherwise we may fall in daunger a hundred times more to be feared, then were we enclosed in the inextricable Labyrinth.

Your reason is good, Cousin, answered *Palmendos*, wherefore presently we will go seeke for the prison: wherein my Lord the King hath bene kept so long : After they had searched a good while in vaine, at length they found him
in

The history of *Palmendos*. 88

in a strong Tower, bound with huge barres of yron, he being so leane, wrinkled, pale and wan, as they marvelled to see him so withered away.

Palmendos beholding him in this grievous plight, rememb'ring this was the father to his best beloved *Francelina*, compassion caused the teares to trickle down his cheekes: but the King not perceiuing this humanitie, rather amazed to see their *Swordes* so bloodie, thought they were come to end his miserable & distressed life, wherefore he willingly prepared himselfe thereto, saying, *Soueraign redeemer of humaine nature, to thee I commend my soule, which must now leaue this loathsome prison, be thou then my intercessour to thy mercifull Father, hauing so patiently for my sinnes suffered punishment in this wretched place. And seeing hee hath reputed my bodie unworthy longer being in this life, be thou my gracious mediatur for my soule, that in his iudgement it bee not bannished from eternall felicitie promised to the good.*

This prayer hauing stopt the passage of *Palmendos* speech, *Ozario* bled these wordes to the King. *My Lord, bee not dismayed, we come not hither to offer yee any outrage, but to deliuer you from this thraldome, and carry yee with vs to Constantinople: where you shall finde your Queene and faire Daughter *Francelina*, by whose means your troubles haue nowe taken end, and there they stay onely for your coming.*

Afterward he declared the whole successe of the action, and breaking the barres of the little wicket, tooke him forth of that darke prison, wherein hee had remained twentie yeeres, such marueilous hatred did the great *Turke* beare him. Yet could hee not bee certainlye resolved of his libertie, till hee sawe the Captaine and the rest that were slaine, when embracing the *Knights*, hee thanked *God* and them for his happie deliuerance.

Palmendos thought it necessary to make no longer stay
there,

28 The history of *Palmendos*.

there, wherfoze commanding one of their Squires to fetch a good horse out of the Captains stable, they caused the king to mount thereon: then remembzing the former speeches of Ifida, he would not suffer any thing els to bee carried from the Castell.

CHAP. XXIX.

How the King of Thessalie departing with Palmendos from the Castel of Albayzo, they met the great Turks Daughter by the way, whome the Prince carried thence by the vertue of his Sworde. And how Ripole hauing taken order for the buriall of them that were slaine, hee went to complaine thereof to the great Turke.



Almendos remembzing his returne to *Constantinople*, and deuising how hee might safely get away from the Castell of *Albayzo*, he caused all the gentlewomen that were left alins to bee locked in one Chamber: and so sone as it waxed darke, leauing the great Gates wide open, and the Bridges downe,

they all rode away: Orycano being their guide as he was befoze. About midnight they came to the Pages mothers house, where among the trees in the Garden, they espied diuers lighted torches, and a sumptuous bed in the midst of the Arbour, at which sight not marueiling a little, they staid there awhile: but Palmendos desirous to bee further satisfied heerein, gaue his horse to Orycano, and by a wing his vertuous Sworde, charmed all that were in the Garden fast asleepe, by which meanes hee came to the
rich

The history of *Palmendos*. 89

rich beds side, wherein he saw a very beautifull Ladie. Her name was Marencida, eldest daughter to the great Turke, and wife to the King Ocurites of *Culaquin*, whom *Palmendos* found neere the Gulfe of *Tanaïs* & *Meotides*: she nowe journeying to recreate herselfe with her Mother, at a fayre Castell not farre from this place, whether she went thre daies before in great anger from the Courte, because the great Turke loued another of his concubines better then her. Marencida mourning for the taking of the King her Husband, craued leaue of the great Turke her father, that she might goe visite her Mother for seauen or eight daies, where with her she might beare a share of her greefe and heavines: so parting from the Courte honourably accompanied, and alighting at this pleasant bower to refresh her selfe, because the night suddainly prevented her, she commanded the Groomes to prepare her bed for that night in the Arbour, her Ladies, Gentlewomen and Guard, being all there about her. *Palmendos* having charmed with his sword all her attendants a sleepe, approached neere the beddes side, when the Princesse thinking on her Husbonds imprisonment, gaue many greivous sighes from the depth of her hart, cursing the Knight that took him, as also *Constantinople* for uniuersally detayning him, and to these mournfull regrets added these speeches.

My noble Lord, Oh that I had some sure & loyall person, that might conduct me to the place where thou art, to the ende my longing mind might be satisfied with sight of thee, and these two sources of teares stayed from further streaming over: for living here, my griefes grow intolerable, and I abide the most desolate Ladie in all *Asia*. Other lamentable speeches she uttered, till nature no longer able to outstand the charges of brownes, caused her to fall fast a sleepe: and *Palmendos* having heard what had passed, imagined her to be the great Turkes Daughter, Wife to the King Ocurites, who he sent to *Constantinople*. Wherefore seeing all her Guard soundly sleeping, he folded down

The history of *Palmendos*.

the bed clothes, and because the precious Calamite in his Sword, by nature draweth the body of man or woman to it, as the Adamant dooth the yron: the Ladie presently arose into his Armes, so being kept a sleepe by his enchanted Sworde, lay as quiet in his armes, as sayre Daphne did with Phæbus, when Iupiter conuerted her into a Baye tree. Wrapping her cosly Mantle about her, hee departed safely from the Guard, & comming where Oricano stayed with his horse, made such shift as he mounted into the saddle, and so galloped to the rest of his company, who marvelled not a little that he had got so good a bootie. Great hast they made till they got on ship-board, when Palmendos laying her upon his bed, and kissing her reuerently because she was of such honoꝝ: he put vp his vertuous sword into the sheathe, when very soone after Marencida awaked, and seeing herselfe in the company of straungers, crying out with feare, she said. Alas where am I: what haue I no one about me that I know? how came I so strangely into this place? why Fortune? hast thou not yet afflicted me enough? are my starres grown into such hatred towards mee, as in my sleepe to seeke my destruction? And what are you y haue bene so bolde as to take me out of my bed: this audacious behauiour will returne you no other guerdon, then the very sharpest death that can be denised. Madame, answered Palmendos, from that wee shall keepe our selues so well as we may, as for my selfe, I am a knight of a Countrey far hence, and hearing by chaunce what mone ye made, for the captiuitie of the King your Husband, as also howe desirous you seemed to see him in Constantinople, I was greatly moued to pittie your affliction, and as one willing to pleasure you heerein, as also what other thing you shall commaund mee, I tooke yee forth of your bed, promising ye by my religious vowes to Chivalrie, not onely to shewe you the King Ourites: but also to garde your chastitie incontaminate, as free from the least spot of dishonour, as when yee happened into my custodie.

Alse

The history of *Palmendos*. 90

False and disloyall Knight, quoth shee, how can I but receiue shame and infamie by this treacherie, hauing in such sort beene taken from among my Guardes: If I desired to see the King my husband, it was only to content my minde, which is thereto moued with belement affection: yet might my meaning be far enough from my words, because I could not doe it without my Fathers licence, and moze willingly woulde I ende my life in this place, then goe with thee of whom I canne imagine no good thought, but as thou hast feloniously stolen mee from my bedde, so wilt thou heereafter trayterously murder me. I am neither Theefe or Traytour, answered *Palmendos*, but a Knight readie at your commaundement, if so you take my seruice in good worth: and seeing you are now in my puissance, determine to goe with me willingly or perforce, and thinke not I intend your death, for it is farre from my thought I promise you.

Then began *Marencida* to teare her haire, which seemed as the Golden wyer, and beate her faire handes so white as the Alablaster, with out-cryes as a Woman depriued of her senses: when *Prince* pittying these feminine importunities, drew his sword, and to ease these extreames charmed her a sleepe againe. During thys time, *Ozario* had tolde the King of *Thessalie* the whole newes of his Daughter *Francelina*, whereto hee gaue good attention, because since the time of his imprisonment, he had not heard any thing as concerning the affaires of his Realme, or that *Queene* his wife had any such Daughter, wherefore the teares trickling downe his face, he came and embraced *Palmendos*, saying. In sooth my Sonne, al the greuous toyments I haue heertofore endured, seme nothing in respect of the comfort I nowe feele, that my vnknowne Child shall enioy a man so vertuous: and for this Ladies taking I am likewise glad, because by this meane I shall be reuenged sufficiently on the Turke. Thus dooth God, answered *Palmendos*, he we himselfe a iuste Judge, and

The history of *Palmendos*.

the true director of all humane actions, limiting euerie occasion according as best him please: but we were best to make what speed we can hence, els may we repent our coming among these inerozable Tyrants. Marencida awaking againe, and not perswaded with all the courteous intreaties the Prince could deuise, she still continued her former acclamations, not vnlike Ariadne at the coming of Bacchus, when she was found forsaken by Theseus at the sea-side: in like sort did she rene to her maledictions, inuocating on Neptune and Thetis, as also y^e Tritons their Heralds, Monsters, Nymphes and Sirens, that they might suffer shipwracke in the Sea, and the fishes feede on her unhappie carcase. But Ozalio pittying her dolorous complaints, and finding his hart somewhat espized with her loue, intreated Palmendos to graunt him one request, which aboue al things els he required at his hands, when the Prince yeelding to any thing his Cozin would demand, Ozalio proceeded in this manner.

My sute is woorthy Lord and Cozin, to enioy this Lady as my Wife, to whom I know the destinies haue fatallie reserued mee, considering the suddaine chaunge and inexplicable controuersie my hart endureth: whereas the continual accompanying of beautiful Ladies heertofore, could neuer mooue my frozen affections, and nowe I feele them not warme but boyling. Casilie may yee (quoth Palmendos) obtaine this demand of mee, if nothing els stande in the way to hinder it, and as much doe I desire your aduancement, as any waie I can be couetous of mine own, hoping while I liue to see no diuorce between vs, but that our estates shall continue equally together, and in witnes of my worde, I deliuer yee the charge of this Princesse, heereafter to dispose of her according to your desires. Ozalio now bleseth all decent courtesies to Marencida, whereby to gaine fauour in her cozeit: yet all was in vaine, for she would not afforde him any good countenaunce, but remained in her wonted obstinacie.

When

The history of *Palmendos*. 91

When the poore Fisherwoman vnderstood by his Sonne Orycano, how his guests had deliuered y^e King of *Thessalie* out of *Albayzo Castell*, hee thought it no longer tarrying for him in *Turkie*, wherefore hee came and intreated the Prince *Palmendos*, y^e he might saile with him into *Christendome*, which sute was very soone obtained, so hee, his wife and familie did all come aboard the Ship, the Prince promising to reward their gentlenes liberallie.

Nowe let vs come to the Guardes and them that attended on *Marencida*, who waking & not finding their Ladie in her bed, began to chafe and rage in most extream manner: some renting their haire & beards violentlie, others running mad among the Trees, thinking she had bene metamorphized in the Garden, nor coulde they imagine how to escape the danger when the great Turke shoulde heare of this mishap. These comfortles creatures thus amazed, not daring any one of them to goe tell the Emperour heerof, they determined to flie the Countrey, and returne no moze to the Courte, leauing *Marencidas* Ladies and Gentlewomen mourning in that vnhappy place, where (about noone) *Ripole Brother* to *Iffida* arriued, returning from the wedding with his wife & diuers braue Knights: but when he vnderstood the cause of their sorrow, hee was stricken into such a quandarie, as hee woulde passe no further befoze hee enquired moze of this cuent. In meane while he sent a Squire to *Albayzo Castell*, to aduertise his Father of his comming, and the Squire praucing vp to the Fortresse, meruailed to see the Gates wide open, but much moze when he saw the slaughter of the Knights, and the Captaine himselfe lie slaine among them: nowe was he surprized with such feare, as hee had not the hart to tarry there any longer, but trusting to the speedy succour of his horse legges, galloped with all speede to his Maister, where standing awhile as a man beside himselfe, at length he thus spake. Wardon me, my Lord, in declaring a bloodie and tragicall report, your worthy Father & all the Guard

The history of *Palmendos*.

of the Castell, Iye cruellie murdered in the base Courte, and because I founde the greates Gates open, I doubt the Treasure and riches in the Castell, hath occasioned thys massacre by some robbers and theeves. Ripole hearing these vnlooked for newes, terrified in such sort as he coulde not tell what to say, mounted on a lusty Courser and rode to the Castell, the Gentlemen bringing his wife faire and softlie after: but when he beheld this woful spectacle, and what a butcherie *Palmendos* Sworde had made, his Seruants feared he woulde haue followed in this harde fortune. For can I heare set downe the rufull mones, which Ripole made ouer his Father, Mother & Sister, no doubt they were as strange and yhesome as this accident: but when they had searched throught the Castell, and founde nothing wanting but the King of *Thessalie*, they iudged the Authours of this tirannis to be Christians, and that they likewise had caried awaie the Queene *Marencida*. After he had taken order for interring the deade, he rode immediatlie toward the great Turke, hauing heard of *Iffidaes* Purse, all that had past betweene her & the two Knights, and beeing come befoze the Emperour, he fell at his seete, deliuering the signes of an afflicted spirite, which onelie sought for grace and mercie. At length he declared the substance of this weakfull occurrence, as well that of *Marencida* his Maiesties Daughter, as the other of hys Fathers death, and deliuerance of the King of *Thessalie*, affirming his Sister *Iffida* as onely cause thereof, & by what traynes she had bene beguiled, himselfe beeing altogether innocent of the treason: notwithstanding, hee freely offered himselfe at his gracious disposition, to abide whatsoeuer he woulde assigne him. These wordes so wounded the Turke to the hart, as hee remained silent a great while, anger had so locked vp the passage of his speeche: yet furiously at length starting from his Chayze, hee rayled on the Gods, starres, deuils and all the infernall powers. *Abdomet*, quoth he, doubtlesse thou art angry with mee,

The history of *Palmendos*. 92

or els dost take but little care of thy seruants, that euer
more haue extolled thee aboue all other Gods and Pro-
phets: but much I wonder thou woldest thus forget me,
vnlesse thou wilt haue mee thinke thee extremely offen-
ded, or that the hope is vaine and frustrate which is repo-
sed in thee. Thou starres, not inclined to fauour me, but ra-
ther affecting my totall ruine, wherein haue I so haynously
offended, that you shoulde take so sharpe and rigorous ven-
geance on me: what may this p̄sage to me hereafter,
but some great misfortune & suddaine mutation in *Asia*?
yet will I so carefully foresee these affayres, as the sedici-
ous performers of this villainie, shall not cary it alway so
lightlie. Like sorowes made this Infidell for his mishap,
when many of his Knights, without attending other com-
maundement, got ready shippes, Gallies & other vessels
for warre, to pursue the causers of this tragicall accident,
but their labour was spent in vayne, albeit not long after
they hearde the trueth of all: which procured such hatred
betweene the *Turkes* and the *Grecians*, as they ceased not
till with hostilitie they had inuaded *Greece*. But it was
not during the raigne of the Emperour Palmerin, or anie
of his race or next posteritie, for while they liued & *Turkes*
durst not stirre against them: yet long time after, when
Ottoman a fierce and proude Prince gouerned, infinite ca-
uilles happened in *Europe*, where he tooke and sacked ma-
ny good Cities, Townes & Castels. Now would the great
Turke not suffer Ripole to be further tormented, because
he was found altogether innocent in the action, but sent him
back to the Castel of Albayzo, making him Captain ther-
of as his father was before. And long time continued he
sad & mellanchollie, thinking hee had recieued wonderfull
dishonour by the losse of his Daughter Marcida: nor
shold he euer recouer the same, til *Greece* were beaten flat
to the ground, and the Emperour Palmerin with all his
kindred utterly destroyed: where in these ragings we wil
leau him, and returne to our purpose.

CHAP.

The history of *Palmendos*.

CHAP. XXX.

Howe Palmendos with his company arrived at Constantinople, where the Emperour came & receiued them at the Porte. VVhat speeches hee had with the Queene Marencida, after they were come to the Pallace, howe ioyfully likewise the Queene of Thessalie and Franceli-na her daughter, welcommed home the King her father.



The Marriners cherefully boy-
ling their sailes, left the coaste
of *Turkie* and launched into the
maine Sea, hauing the winde
and weather so fauourable, as
without anie impeachmēt they
attained *ḡ* Bosphor of *Thrace*,
where *Palmendos* sent his Co-
zin *Ozalis* befoze to the Empe-
rour, that the King of *Thessalie*
might bee entertained with honour beseming so great a
Prince. *Ozalis* making speede in a swift little *Winnesse*,
being landed went directly to the *Pallace*, and finding the
Emperour in the great *Hall*, conferring with his Lordes
about the enchanted *Birde*, which that morning had de-
liuered manie pleasant notes, wherfore hee expected some
comfortable newes, when *Ozalis* falling on his knée, be-
gan in this manner.

Great Lord, I am the seruaunt and freend to the no-
ble *Palmendos*, whose renoune hath heretofore been bla-
zed in this Court, and he humbly intreateth your highnes
by mee, that you woulde entertaine the King of *Thessalie*,
whom he hath brought from *Turkie*, with such grace and
honour as besemeth his dignitie. By this time I thinke
they are entred the *Hauen*, in that they were not farre off
when

The history of *Palmendos*. 93

When I left them, I being sent before to acquaint your
 Moste beere with. The Emperour exceeding ioyfull at
 these newes, rose and embraced Ozalio very graciously,
 and causing all his Knights and Barons to prepare them-
 selues, said, he would goe to the Port in person to welcom
 them. Right soone were these tydings byted through the
 Court, wherewith the Emperesse & her Ladies were highly
 pleased, especially the mourning Quēen of *Thessalie* for her
 Husbonds returne, and faire *Francelina* for her loonellie
 freende, whose absence made her imagine euery howe a
 peere: wherfore in haste they got them before to the Port,
 attended on by their Ladies and Gentlewomen, where
Palmendos being new come on shore with the King, thus
 spake to him. Behold my good Lorde, your Queene and
 Daughter, who are ioyfullie come to salute your arriual:
 but when he looked on *Francelina*, the whole quire of hea-
 uen was present in his thoughts. The Queene very ear-
 nestlie beheld the King her husband, when seeing his haire
 and beard so stranglie ouer-growne, beside, his skyn and
 complexion so wonderfully altered, as doubtfull in minde,
 she came to him with these wordes. Are ye (my Lord) the
 king of *Thessalie*, for whom my hart hath suffered exceeding
 greefe? I praye ye resolute me presentlie, without holding
 me in longer suspence, in that your deformed estate hath
 greatlie peruered my remembrance.

Madame, answered the King, it is no meruel though
 you know me not, considering the long time since ye sawe
 me last, which the integrity of our loue hath made vs ima-
 gine of greater compasse, although the accustomed reuolu-
 tion of yeres, neither deminish or increase one moment in
 their naturall course: notwithstanding, I am the same
 King your Husband, who haue felt moze passions for your
 absence, then anguish or torment in my miserable captiui-
 tie. But seeing the immortall bountie hath suffered mee
 once againe to see you, before my soule forsake this passible
 bodie, which was my continuall desire during my tribu-

B b. 1.

lation,

The history of *Palmendos*.

lation: nowe care I not though Death presentlie doo his
 ductie, for seeing the circle of your armes haue embraced
 me, I am the readier for my mother Earth to receiue me.
 Nowe are ioyfull teares plentifully powred forth on all
 sides, and embracings so vehement, as though they should
 neuer unfold againe, the libertie of speeche being hindered
 all this while, for *Palmendos* and *Francelina* were trans-
 ported into a second heauen, where the outward ceremo-
 nies serued to confirme the inward contentation, at length
 the Queene taking *Francelina* by the hande, thus spake to
 the King. See here my Lord your Daughter, of whom I
 was but newlie conceived when you went from *Thessalie*,
 happie and fortunate may she iustly bee feared, in that
 her destiny hath deliuered you from prison, restored me
 my former ioy, and giuen her the most perfect Knight that
 euer bare Armes. When the King behelde his Daughter
 so faire and gracious, he took her in his armes, crying
 with silent fauours his hartie ioy: and in this while the
 Emperour came with his traine, alighting from his horse
 to welcome the King of *Thessalie*, whom when he behelde
 so spent and disfigured, the teares fell from his eyes, and
 embracing him in his armes, sayde.

My noble Brother, heauen haue the honour for deli-
 uering ye from our common enemy, where albeit I was
 heretofore glad of your rescue, yet was I grieued at
 your imprisonment, being then my selfe (as you know) in
 the Turkes power, although hee gaue mee more libertie
 then you, in hope I would haue ayded him with my utter-
 most abilitie: my desire then to get from his seruice, con-
 strayned me to deale somewhat hardlie against you, an er-
 rour too notable, and I confesse worthy reprehension: but
 God pardoning the offences of the repentaunt, hath in pitie
 regarded vs both, and by his inexhaustible goodnes, di-
 rected all thinges to a happy ende. My Lord, replied the
 King, the whole discourse thereof haue I heard by *Palmē-*
dos, which giues me reason not to thinke any fault in you,
 when

The history of *Palmendos*. 94

When yee coulde not otherwise helpe the same: but let vs leaue occasions past, seeing heauen hath so miraculously deliuered me, that I should come my selfe to present the entire affection, wherewith I am bound to your highnes service. For could any thing in the world, said the Emperour, more delight me, then your coming with the knight I haue so long desired to see: with whom I cannot but be offended, (these words he merily uttered) in that hee hath taried so long time from mee: then Palmendos falling on his knee, modestly answered in this maner. O dead Lord, if hertofore I haue prouoked your displeasure, I confesse such punishment is due to me as you shall ordaine, & willingly will I endure it, to fashion mee the better to your service, wherein I woulde employ my selfe according to your appointment, although it were to fight against the Gates of death: wherof I gladly could afford some proofe so please your highnes to enioyne me such a taske, as may expresse my zeale & forwardnes. And that you may know the name of your voluntarie Seruaunt, I am that Palmendos, who was since the howre of my birthe destyned to follow your vertues, humbly intreating to discharge your remembraunce of any discontentment I haue heretofore occasioned: in that mine owne minde still perswaded me, I wanted nothings to come before your excellencie.

The Emperour beholding him of such gallant stature, did not a little meruaile at his rare perfections, wherfore taking him graciously in his armes, desired he would commaund any thing wherein he might stand him in sted, for he was not able to requite his high deseruings. Afterward came Primaleon & courteously entertained him, the like did Abenunco, signifying how much he was bound to him for his happy deliuerance: then came Arnedes with the other Lordes and knights, all of them embracing the hardie Champion that went away with the honour of the Tourney.

By this time had Ozalio brought Marencida on horse,

The history of Palmendos.

Shee wondring to behold such state and royaltie, wherefore she desired to know the place of her landing. Madame, answered Ozalio, this Cittie is called *Constantinople*, and among this flourishing troope of Princes, who haue boursed their comming hether to this Port, there may yee behold the famous Emperour Palmerin, who is heere in person to receiue the King of *Thessalie*, and the worthy Knight that deliuered him from prison: your selfe likewise will esteeme him a vertuous Prince, by the good entertainment you shall enioy, when once yee vnderstandeth your state and calling, so that I hope you will not repent this voyage, were it but to haue knowledge of him alone.

How miserable and vnfortunate am I, quoth she, to fall into the mercy of my fathers capitall enemy: how can my griefes but growe into an exceeding surplusage? If I see the King Ocurites my husband, the meeting will bee with meruailous hart breake on either side, being both of vs captiue to the very worst enemy we haue. The Emperour and his Lords kindly saluted her: but she would not once bowe herselfe or make any answer, wherewith standers by very much wondred, tearming her a Woman of rough & vnseemely behauiour, saying nature might much better haue made her a man. Counting all on horseback, in most comelie order they rode to the Pallace, where the Emperesse and her Ladies met them in the Court: and to tell the courtesies, gratulations and welcome there vied, would aske a world of time, yet little to the purpose, let it suffice then, they are so well entertained as yee can anie way imagine.

Palmendos taking Marencida by the hande, brought her to the Princesse Philocrista with these speeches. I desire you Madame, to accept this Lady into your company, and giue her such good counsell as you can best deuise, for she is descended of royall blood I tell ye. Sir Palmendos, replied the Princesse, I must obey what you commaunde me, for the loue I beare to you and your sweete frende,
and

The history of *Palmendos*. 95

and I imagine my selfe fortunate, having such a precious gage from a knight so perfect, nor shall she be worse intreated then mine owne selfe.

Marencida hearing these gracious speeches, and what courtesie Palmendos vsed to the Princesse, perceiued that she was the Emperours Daughter, wherefore she gaue her many thanks, shewing better countenance then before she did to any: which Philocrista tooke very kindly, and mounting vpp the steppes with her into the Hall, she came to Francelina with these wordes. Thys Ladie, Madame, doth now supply your place, seeing Lorde Palmendos is returned, so now your company with me must discontinue, because reason and your fatall loue doth so commaunde, notwithstanding, I hope our amitie shall continue.

Staye Princesse, answered Francelina, wee are both so farre yours, and so good part haue ye in my Lord, as you shall finde your selfe no lesse contented then abashed when ye knowe all: therefore feare not that I will forget your freendly familiaritie, rather will I continue your louing differ, as our further assurance of our mutuall agreement. Sundry other speeches passed betwene the two young Ladies, in meane while Marencida looking about her, and remeinbring the great pompe, state and riches of her Father, she made but slender account of the Emperours Courte, which was not at this time so well stored with knights as it was wont to be, whereupon shee giuing a great sigh, thus vttered her minde.

You knowe, Emperour of *Constantinople*, that the sumptuous royaltie of my Fathers Courte, doth exceede the greatest Princes in the whole world, as also howe manie mightie Lordes serue him with homage and fidelitie, because heretofore you haue secne the same, where if yee were so aduenturous and hardie, to kill without feare of them (as the whole worlde knoweth) the mightie Emperour mine Uncle, thinke I pray you, what miserable case

The history of *Palmendos*.

the Ladie is in, so traiterously brought from her owne native Countrey, and now deliuered captiue into your custodie, wherein me thinkes, in respect of the renowne spread abroade of you, you should take example by my aduersitie, and rather greeue then glorie therein, as I see you doe, considering that inconstant Fortune is still variable, and doth not alwaies allowe men felicitie. This I speake not, whereby to gaine & more fauour or honour in your Court, because death would be much more welcome to mee, then to liue in the variation of mind I doe: wherfore I intreate ye againe (if intreatie may besetme an aduersarie) heereafter to conserue your reputation in such sort, as I may receiue no impeach to mine honour, and you shall comfort mee better therein, then all the commendation of your fame can doe.

To these wordes shee added many rusfull complaynts, as the Emperour being therewith moued to compassion, replied in this manner. I vnderstande, Madame, full well what ye haue said, and knowe beside, that the feminine choller which gouerneth your spirit, maketh you vse such kinde of language, as is cleane exempt from all the rules of womanlike modestie: nor am I now to learne, that the strength of earthlie Kinges and Potentates is lesse then nothing, when God is bent repugnaunt against them, whereby we are all to resolue, that we can doe no good acte without his assistance. According to his direction came I to your Uncles Courte, before whom I protest, and craue no mercie in the day of vengeance, if I see him, or euer thought to doe it, being too farre carryed away from minding anye such intent, by the honour I had before receiued at his highnes handes. Yet was I pricke to his forcible detayning of the Ladie, and laboured to restore her to her Lorde and Husbnde, shee being Daughter to the renowned King of *Englande*, and Wife to the now famous Emperour *Trincus of Allemaigne*:
heerein

The history of *Palmendos*. 96

heerein (mee thinkes) I committed no offence, hee keeping her moſte vniuſſlie, pꝛofaning thereby the ſacred Lawes of royall equitie.

And becauſe the wyſe haue euermoze patiently endured their fortune, beeing either good or badde, I verilie perſwade my ſelfe Madaine, that you wyll ſozbeare to complaine and lament in this vnſeemely manner, knowing your ſelfe to bee conquered by the moſt courteous and debonaire Knight that this daie lyueth in *Europe*, euen he that in *Helleſpont* ouer-came the King *Ocurites* your Huſbande.

Theſe newes ſo greeued *Marencida* to the harte, when ſhe heard the Emperour ſay, that the King her huſbande and ſhee herſelfe were taken bothe captiue by one Knight, as frantick-like ſhee coulde haue eaten her fleſhe with anger, but the young Princeſſe *Philocrifta* conducting her to her Chamber, appeaſed her furie with diuers frendly ſpeeches and curteous behauiour. But let vs now returne againe to the Prince *Palmendos*, who in this time vnarmed himſelfe, that the Emperour might at moze pleaſure beholde him.

The history of *Palmendos*.

CHAP. XXXI.

What courteous conference Palmendos had with the Emperour, the Empresse and Primaleon: And how beeing afterward baptized, hee was affianced to his Lady.



After that Palmendos had put off his Armour, hee threw a rich Turkish robe about him, imbrodered all over with oriental pearls, which he brought from *Tharsus* with him, according to the moderne custome used among the most magnificent Kings of *Asia*, intending to wear it when he should come in the Emperours presence. Being returned into the great Hall, and each one desirous to understand his originall, Primaleon took him by the hande and sat downe, when the Emperour began in this manner. My noble friend Palmendos, longer must ye not conceale your selfe, your renowne being so lanishly bruted thorow all Countreies: tell me then I pray ye, of what parents ye are issued, as also what yee thinke els convenient to acquaint vs withall.

Gracious Lord, answered Palmendos, with you to whom I so reuerence by honour, I maye not dissemble in anie point, for that I were unworthie your presence, if I should deale double with so great a state. Knowe then mightie Emperour, that I am Sonne to the Quene of *Tharsus*, the affectionate servant and bowed friend to your Majesty, forsaking my Countrey by a strange occasion, so soone as I understode where my father remained, which long before was concealed from me. The cause of my comming into your highnes Court, was the same & praises I heard of

The history of *Palmendos*. 97

of *Francelina*, to whose service the fatall destinies enioyned me at my very essence, in that I never affected any other *Ladie*, yet reputing my selfe, unworthy her grace and favour, to be seene in this honourable Court. To this he added the discourse of the olde woman, that appeared to him in the *Pallace* at *Tharsus*, and how she blamed him for his idle and slothfull life: yet hiding how she assured him to bee his *Sonne*, because further opinion should passe till that were discovered. But quoth he, as hitherto I haue liued according to the law of *Mahomet*, so now would I willingly receiue *Christian Baptisme*, which I faithfully promised for my good successe, wher heauen made me able to deliuer this worthy *Princesse*. When the *Emperour* heard these thinges, hee presently iudged *Palmendos* to be his *Sonne*, by the suddaine and summarie supputation he made of his age, and of the time he was in *Pasmeria*, where the *Queene* his mother came subtilly acquainted with him. Bashful herof he was when he looked on the *Empresse*, as his vermilion colour plainly discovered, yet did he discretly shadowe the same: notwithstanding, the *Empresse* misdoubted somewhat, remembering her dreame of the *Queene* of *Tharsus*, and what the *Emperour* himselfe had told her before, yet made she no shew of any such matter, wisely governing her thoughtes from outward suspicion, whereupon the *Emperour* thus began againe.

In sooth my especiall good friend *Palmendos*, I now loue and esteeme yee much better then before, understanding that you are *Sonne* to the *Queene* of *Tharsus*, who did mee so great honoꝝ in her Countries, her very name maketh me remember my trauailes in those parts: so that I know not howe to expresse my ioy, hearing your selfe so well resolved, to forsake the *Ethnick* paganism of your blasphemous Gods. Wherefore I am thus aduised, not to prolong so good an occasion, but to morrow you shall receiue the holy charracter of *Christianitie*, and be likewise

The history of *Palmendos*.

affiaunced to your Lady *Francelina*: for reason requireth herein to hasten your right, seeing for her you have endured such dangerous traualles, and forsaken a Realme of so great estate, the riches and fertility whercof I am wel acquainted withall. The King and Quene of *Thessalie* were not a little glad, when they heard that *Palmendos* was heire to a kingdome, but much moze was their understanding his original, whereof the Emperoz would not as yet make further inquirie, till he were better assured of the certaintie: and good occasion falling out so wel, as the Emperesse, her Ladies and euery one departing to their Chambers, leaving the Emperoz and *Palmendos* secretly conferring together, of matters concerning the *Ile Delphos* and such like, but at length his Maestie opened his minde, saying that he imagined him to be his Sonne, wherefoze he was desirous to be therein resolved. In respect, my good Lord, answered *Palmendos*, that truth must and will come forth at length, know then mighty Prince and my gracious father, that in the Realme of *Pasmeria*, you begot me your Sonne, the night befoze you departed from the Quene my mother, for shee being aduertised of your rare perfections, became impatient in her amorous affections, and compassed the meane of your acquaintance, by a charmed drinke provided for that purpose. And heere behold the effect of this action, my selfe your humble son and obedient servant, yet did my mother giue mee a further testimonie hereof, hauing her selfe giuen you the like at your departure: but *Francelina* hath the same now in possession, for to her I toke it after her deliuerance. And neuer moze she concealed this matter from me, till miraculously I was enformed both thereof, and as concerning *Francelina*, because she feared I would forsake my Countrey, to come and serue in your highnes Court. As concerning my behauiour since that time, somewhat I am sure hath happened to your hearing, yet of such small and tender balme, as they neither besetmed this place or your person,

The history of *Palmendos*. 99

person. The Emperour raiſhed with conceit of this report, knew not which way beſt to ſignifie his ioy, for conſidering the ſtraunge courſe of the action paſſe, and what the ſucceſſe thereof now proued, his ſpirites were carried away with wonderfull imaginations.

Oh my noble *Donne Palmendos*, quoth he, full well am I aſſured of what thou haſt ſaid, although nature hath ſhaped thee not much vnlike me, & giuen thee ſuch heroycall courage as I had in my younger daies: and albeit the Emperreſſe may well be offended with me, when ſhee ſhall be thus thoroughly reſolued, yet is her wiſedome and modeſtie ſuch, as ſhe will not miſlike what I allow. With theſe wordes the Emperour tooke him by the hand, going with him preſently to the Emperreſſe Chamber, and after his Maieſtie had kindly kiſſed her, ſhee entered into theſe ſpeeches.

I know well *Madame*, that hertofore you haue held good opinion of my loyaltie, and that I euer loued you entirely, as your ſelfe could deſire no better proue thereof: but the cauſe why I vſe theſe wordes at this inſtant, is a little ſcruple that long ſince entered my minde, and I feare wil offend yee when the ſame is knowen. Yet leaſt further doubtſes ſhould trouble your thoughtes, I proteſt before him who is the only ſearcher of hearts, and I ſwear by all the diuine aſſiſtants about his tribunall, that neuer with my will and knowledge did I contaminate our wedlocke-bedde, much leſſe haue I infringed the lawes of marriage, or polluted the inuiolable faith I ſolemnely gaue yee.

Notwithſtanding ſuch hath been my former fortune, that another woman beſide your ſelfe, by charmes obtained what was your right, then muſt you not (*Madame*) be ſo ſeuere and rigorous, as not to pardon mee, ſeing I haue voluntarily confeſſed mine offence, beſide, the fault not proceeding from me, deliuer my cauſe to be more innocent.

Cc. 2.

Remember

The history of *Palmendos*.

Remember then Madame, what sometime you tolde me concerning the Queene of *Tharsus*, your dreame I perceiue was not altogether in vaine: in that shee had such knowledge of mee, by meanes of an enchaunted drinke I receiued bnauires, as engendered *Palmendos* this gentle knight. My Lord, answered the Emperesse, with a smiling countenance, at the first time I beheld *Palmendos* I was perswaded what you haue tolde me, so liuely doth he resemble ye, in countenance and personage: wherefoze I not onely pardon ye, being ignoraunt of begetting such an excellent and perfect creature, but thanke heaven that you were the father to a Son so famous. As for *Palmendos*, he shal now accept me as his mother, & I wil loue him no lesse then mine owne Sonne *Primaleon*. With sundrie other speeches were these ioyes confirmed, and *Palmendos* right louingly embraced by the Emperesse, at length *Primaleon* came, and hee being thoroughly acquainted with the matter, took the Prince in his armes thus speaking.

Hath the mighty gouernour of the heauens appointed, that the onely flower of chualrie should bee my brother? wherein can I more honour that superexcelling bounty, then confirming my thanks to him by kindnes to the worthy copartner of my vitall blode, drawn from the selfe same source where I receiued my originall? Assure your selfe therefore my most noble brother, that *Primaleon* is bowed to imitate your rare fortunes, & treading the selfe same steps you haue done, to eternize the name of our renowned father: continuing in the meane time so readie at your commaund, as hee that honoereth you with most zealous affection. Might I enter the boldnes, answered *Palmendos*, as to title you by the name of my brother, the second step of my desires were attained. and though I dare not strue to coequall my self with you in kindnes, yet wil I ouer pace ye in dutie & affection: continuing the seruant of *Primaleons* welfare, while the starre of my birthday vouchsafeth mee b'cathing.

Heere

The history of *Palmendos*. 99

Here is occasion offered mee of large discourse, concerning the seuerall salutations of the courtly personages, so soon as these news happened in their ears, both the Lords and knightes came to gratulate this newcome sonne, and the Ladies likewise striving to excel them in curtesie: but it were needlesse labour, considering the King and Queen of *Thessalie* concerne this present occasion, and with their daughters ioy vnite them altogether, preparing for the religious obseruations, to bee bled on the morrowe at the christning of *Palmendos*.

On the morrow, the Emperour and all his Barons, mounted on horsebacke, the like doth the Empresse withal her Ladies, and in most honourable manner they ride to this solemnitie: so passing in this pompe through the Citty, they allighted at the Church of *S. Sophie*, where *Palmendos* was religiously baptized, and afterward affianced to *Francelina* by the reuerend Archbishop, she being attired in as sumptuous ornaments, as when *Andromachye* was espoused to the valiant *Hector* of *Troy*, or *Cleopatra* Quene of *Egipt*, when shee contended in magnificence with *Marke Anthonie* the *Triumvirate* her husband, drinking one of the pearles that hung at her eares, esteemed worth two hundred and fiftie thousand crownes. For euen as the Carbuncle, the most rich and precious of all the Orientall stones, dooth in the darke give such a clere and illustrious splendour, as not onely illuminateth all the place, but also setteth the regarders eyes to wonder thereat: of no lesse vertue seemed *Francelina* in the Temple, as the onely and perfect *Phoenix* of her time. In like pompe and royaltie they returned to the Pallace, there beeing such a sumptuous feast prepared, as besetmed the time of so general reioycing, where wanted no honozable drinsses to accompany the same. And during the time of this their honozable whole pleasure, heere thinke I good to pause a little, while you consider on the discourses passed, and I haue moze leasure to perfect the rest of this *Histozie*.

NExt (Gentlemen) followeth the historie of *Primalleon*, wherein (what you see waiting here) is perfectly finished, both *Palmendos* mariage, *Oxalios* loue to *Marencida*, *Rifaranoes* fortunes, & *Recinde* his returne to *Constantinople*. But this I must tel you with al, that now *Primalleon* beginneth his chivalrie, & the famous Prince *Edward* of *England* the course of his aduentures, which are briefly touched in my book of *Palmerin* of *Egnland*, who was his Son: what wonderfull stratagems both he and *Primalleon* performed together, attend till the next tearme and you shalbe resolved. And to accompany this discourse, I hope to send ye the first booke of *Amadis* of *Fraance*, that when ye are wery of the one, you may delight your selfe with the other: so wishing ye no worse then to my selfe, I end.

Yours to his poore power:
Anthony Monday.

Honos alit Artes.

Complete

Bernard Quantch

W.D. & T. Gaddock

As few blank com-
ments

Cc₄ blank - cut away

16. VII. 17

Cat

13-D-17

M

62667

C